

**THE END-DAYS WAR**

**BY:**

**MICAH BURKHOLDER**

## **PROLOGUE**

A Storm is coming. Mankind faces ruin and despair. The World is changing, yet hope remains in the hearts of the people. We go about our daily lives never knowing the forces that could change our destinies forever. We are oblivious, ignorant like sheep to the slaughter; this very Night, marks the beginning of our journey together, a journey into darkness, into madness.

I watch her from the shadows. Is she the one? She has come far already, but she will be tested; tested to the very limits of human endurance and beyond. This night, she walks seeking for a purpose in this life, armed with Ebony Armor, Ebony Boots, Ebony Gauntlets, and an Ebony Greatsword. Tonight, she will begin her journey into utter darkness, into oblivion.

The time has come for me, the Writer of this story to bid you all a very fond farewell. The time has come for you to hear for yourself a tale That only I am worthy to tell you. It is unto me to tell you of this moment, a Dark Fantasy of a Warrior who fights her way against the Demons of Hell. A Warrior who risks everything to fight to the Death against those who wish to cut her down. And finally, a Warrior who seeks A Ranger who was cast out of his land and defeats the Evil that corrupts these Lands before her.

This is the tale of the Ebony Warrior and a Ranger, both who risk everything to rid the Great Evil of these Lands and stand and fight on against the creatures of the Night. And now, I must go forth and I shall live on, I am the Writer of this Dark Fantasy Epic of which you are about to read. I alone will tell you of the events which will come to pass for the Ebony Warrior and the Ranger. Farewell, for now.

## I

Her name was Delphine of Moria, the Ebony Warrior. She was well-known by many to be known as a Warrior who lives and runs from both the living and the dead. Nothing ever held her back when she fought against the Demons before her; there was no known

end to her Quest. She was born like anyone was ever born; coming out of her Mother's Womb and raised by a mother and was given life by the most High. And like anyone of this age, her childhood was tragic and it struck all over when she was just about to be a young adult.

The Grim Reaper came and Death came for all those whom she ever knew, especially her Mother and her Father. Her Mother and Father were killed as they were defending her Daughter by Death itself, but The Reaper was too strong against them. And after that, the Grim Reaper reaches his hand towards Delphine and he began to choke her with just one hand. And as he did this, he pulls out a Dagger filled with a toxic poison that he created with his powers and he stabs Delphine on her shoulder with it. The Poison filled her entire body and her Eyes began to change color and her pupils began to look like that of a Dark Beast's Eye.

So much Blood began to splatter out from her shoulder and so much Gore began to stain the ground and The Grim Reaper's Dagger. Then, the Grim Reaper pulls the Dagger out of Delphine's Shoulder and she falls down to the ground. She could feel nothing but her Blood leaving out of her body and her life slowly began to drain out of her body. The Grim Reaper saw something inside of her that seemed real to him when he was staring deep into her. Then, he lifts up his hand

and he puts it onto Delphine's face and he began to give her some kind of strength that would be with her forever.

The Grim Reaper sees that she would live and see the day where she would come for him after what he has done to her. And so, he left her there on the bloodied ground and on the Dark Night as the Moon shined along with the Clouds. Then, a mysterious person came before her, it was The Wolf Queen; she called herself Lagertha and she picked her up and took her somewhere far away. The Wolf Queen was a Very Mysterious being who wandered the Lands of the Earth for as long as she could even remember. She carried her to the Northern Lands and she took her in and she offered Delphine aid and comfort when she was there.

As she opened her eyes, Delphine saw This Queen of the Wolves before her very eyes and she got herself up and she saw her as a Human. Although the Wolf Queen has the mind and the Heart of a Wolf, she had the Body of a Human and her very presence stunned Delphine for a long time. The Wolf Queen informs her that she led herself to her when she was suffering and full of blood while before The Grim Reaper. She tells Delphine that she has taken the Mighty Aspect of a Demon and she has become even Stronger than before. Delphine did not know how or

even why she was given this Dark Power, perhaps it was because there was something in her that called them to her.

Or it was because there was something that she never knew and nobody would ever tell her because it was cursed and must not be told. Either way, it was cruel and inhuman for even a single person to go through in this time and in this age. Lagertha tells Delphine that she must be trained and must become a Warrior to fight the Demons that walk the Earth. As she fights the Demons, she will know and experience true Darkness and quite possibly a Grisly Death that she will never Escape. This was her life now, her Destiny; she must fight these Demons and send the Grim Reaper back to Hell so humanity could thrive again.

And so, Lagertha trains her for many years and she makes her very skillful with the Bow and the Sword for many long years. These long years of training with the Sword and the Bow made Delphine realize the Destiny that she must fulfill. And so, many years have passed and she was now ready to stand and fight for her life against these Dark Beasts. Lagertha crafts a Strong Armor that was fit for Delphine and she says that she must wear this Armor for the Battles ahead for her. It was the Ebony Armor that she crafted and made; it was a very strong and

powerful Armor that was made of both Steal and Metal.

And so, Delphine puts on this Armor and she goes out into the World and she knows the very thing that she must do in this new life. It would, indeed, be a difficult task if she was not strong enough to fight the Demons before her.

## II

The Struggle for Supremacy is eternal and inevitable, the people of this Age go about their daily lives trying to survive the night. They fight or they die, they run away from terror or they fight to the death against their enemies. That was the life that these people live through and that is their purpose in this life that they are living in. What was Delphine's Purpose? She did not know and she probably never will, because she searched for it for a very long time and she could never find it.

And so, after many years of wandering the World, killing Demons, Defeating Daedra and even Destroying the Lords of Shadow, Delphine finds herself before the presence of the Grim Reaper. The Lords of Shadow were very powerful Beings that served Nobody but themselves and lived by the Sword. Delphine defeated them all and she finally found The

Grim Reaper in the highest peak of all the Realms. He was here for he was summoning Satan to this Earth so he can Rule over the World of Men for all eternity. And so, Delphine and The Grim Reaper fought each other on the Highest Peak of all The Realms with their blades.

Each Strike of the Sword was like a Bolt of Lightning and it was as if the Entire World witnessed this Battle. After Long Moments of battling each other, Delphine has the upper hand and she strikes back against Death itself and she stabs him multiple times and he fell backwards. Though Gravely Wounded and Bloodied, Delphine has done what no other being would do, a Mortal defeating the Grim Reaper. But it was too late, for Satan had already been Summoned to the Lands of the Earth before Delphine's very eyes. Satan confronts Delphine and tells her to join him so he will love her more than God, he tells her that he too didn't deserve to be cast out nor abandoned.

Satan tells Delphine that her Soul is Damned and her Spirit has Darkness already revolving all around it and it will for all Eternity. Satan tells her that she has no choice but to join him so he can have Revenge on God and return to the Heavens. Delphine refuses the offer and tells him that she would rather Die with Honor than live with Shame and Torment. Then, Satan battles Delphine where she stood and she did not hold



herself back from Satan and she fought on against him. As they battled, Satan tells her that God has already abandoned her and even if she beats him, he will always return before her.

Delphine did not hesitate and she did not show mercy against Satan and she continued to Battle against him. And with the dark power that she had and with all of her Anger and all of her fury, she defeats Satan and she gains the upper hand. She does not easily defeat Satan but he vanished and was sent back to Hell and the darkness of the Sky began to vanish. The Demons heard of the defeat of Satan and they retreated and they did not trouble the souls of the people any longer. Though gravely Wounded, Delphine defeated her greatest enemies and sent them back to the Abyss, and all of the Demons went back to whence they came.

But Fate had something else in mind and Fate played a different then she would've expected during this time. Delphine leaves the highest peak of the Realms and she returns to the place where she became the Ebony Warrior. She goes to an abandoned Castle that has a Throne in the center of its place and nobody ever set foot here. Delphine goes into the castle and sits on the Throne and she hid herself from the Earth and she sits here and does not move from there. For she knew that her work was done for now and Time

would move on and a day would come when she would stand up and fight against the Great Evil again.

But for now, she rests here for the time being; she rests here on this Throne and she has made for herself a hiding place until the Time Fate comes for her again.

### III

One Thousand Years have passed since the Great Evil has vanished and The Lands of the Earth prospered and moved on in life. Meanwhile, The Wolf Queen enters the Castle and she enters the Main Hall where nobody has ever entered here. The Castle itself still felt intact and it didn't feel abandoned in the inside but instead, it was the outside. And so, she goes upstairs and it led herself to the Throne Room where Delphine was hiding herself from humanity. Then, Lagertha goes inside the Throne Room and she comes across Delphine and she was still sitting on the Throne.

Delphine still looked like her younger self and she has not aged a bit ever since she came to this Castle a Thousand Years ago. "An unusual hiding place... for the Ebony Warrior. Don't you think?"

Delphine recognizes Lagertha for she was the one who was with her for the majority of her whole

life and she has never forgotten her. "Lagertha... old friend."

"Yes, dear friend. It is I."

"...Where have you been... all this time?"

"Out there. Amongst the Living. What about you? Where have you been hiding all this time... Delphine?"

"Don't you dare call me that! I am the one who runs from both the Living and the Dead. I am the one who defeated the Great Evil of this Earth. Be quick with your words."

"Of course, I see that even this Place has been your Home while I walk this Earth and it prospers. But I came here, for the Earth has need of your help, once again."

"What do you want, Queen of the Wolves?"

"The Demons of Hell has arisen again. The Black Elder Dragon has returned to this land and now the Earth has need for someone to save them. The Demons have found enough courage to attack the people of this Earth and they have overtaken the many Kingdoms of this Earth. The Daedra now rules these Kingdoms and they will stop at nothing to make sure that all of these Kingdoms belong to Satan. The Daedric Lords are preparing for Satan's return and they wish to build a Kingdom in his name. Help me stop him, or you and I will become his favorite pets... for all eternity."

"Why would the Earth want me again? They don't need someone like me ever again. Look at me, look at what he made me. A creature that thirsts for blood and filled with Hatred and contempt for the Demons. Nobody has ever come here, for they do not wish to see me."

"It's time to get out of this wretched Tomb that you have made for yourself. Stop skulking in the Shadows. Do you not care that he will enslave you? Delphine, I know what it is you yearn for."

"I cannot Die. Yet, I cannot Live."

"Help me and I can free you and you can live out the rest of your days in peace."

"What will you have me do?"

"Out there, there is a Ranger who roams the many Lands of the Earth and he killed many Demons that stood in his way. Like you, he has been doing this for many years as the Demons storm the night. Out there, he goes his way and he kills those Creatures that stand in his way. I myself have found him and I guided him on his Journey. You must go and find him, for even though he has the ability to take down these Demons, he would not find it possible to defeat even the Strongest of the Demons."

Lagertha explained to her what she must do, for it was time to rise up again and kill the enemies that were before her in this age of Darkness. The Age of

Demons has come again and the Black Elder Dragon came and the Kingdoms of the Earth fell before the Daedra and the Demons. And so, Delphine spoke with Lagertha again, saying, "Where is this Ranger now?"

"I saw him last in the center region and ever since then, he has returned there to finish off the Demons that were before him. It's not far from here, it's just a few miles away from here."

"Very well. I'll be on my way and I'll see him and see what it is he wants."

"Be with him. For even he must know the true nature of fighting off these creatures. Help him out and bring order to all the Lands of the Earth and I promise you, I will release you from your immortality."

"So be it. Farewell, Lagertha."

"We'll meet again. Take your leave and fight to the death against these Demons."

And so, Lagertha left Delphine and she went out and she wandered amongst the living of the Earth and Delphine gets herself up from the Throne. Then, she picks up her Cape and she wraps it around herself and she picks up her Greatsword. Then, she goes out her way and then she leaves the Throne Room and she leaves the Castle. And so, Delphine was on her way again and then she begins to feel the bright afternoon Sun shine brightly onto her Smooth face. It has been a long time ever since she walked the Earth again and

even though she lived for all of this time, she appeared as if she hasn't aged a year.

As she walked, her Black Armor was seen through all the people that walked that Region, it was as if they've never seen a Woman carry such Armor before. They've also seen her carry a Large Sword on her back, they've never seen a Woman carry any Sword before, let alone a Long Sword used for Battle. As she walked, her Blonde Hair breezed with the wind and her hair was very long. And so, she walked on, Delphine walked on into the Day seeking the Ranger that The Wolf Queen mentioned. She knew that the day would come again and she knew that she must fight on forever in the night killing all of those who would stand in her way.

The Demons of Hell rose again and the time of battling against them came again. The Daedric Lords have come to bring Havoc against the Humans and they work to bring Satan to this Earth.

But Two Heroes, the Ranger and the Ebony Warrior would fight against the Demons and protect the people that live in this Hellish Age. The Ranger and the Ebony Warrior's War against the Daedra and the Demons begins here and now.



## CHAPTER 1: THE RANGER

The Path is indeed difficult for this Ebony Warrior and it will be difficult for the Ranger that she seeks. The Ranger has been either fighting his way against the Demons or perhaps he is seeking in this life. Over the thousand years that the Demons has not roamed this Earth, the people prospered and a new life began. A new age has come where the people were relieved that there were no more Demons roaming these Lands. But that time has passed and the Black Elder Dragon has returned and so the Daedra and the Demons roam the World once again.

Tonight, the Ebony Warrior will rest from all of the walking that she has done and she will dream of the days when she was living peacefully. But unfortunately, she knew that she would never live out her days in peace until all of the Demons were destroyed. She knew that she would have to help out this Ranger and defeat the Daedric Lords that plagued this Earth and it's inhabitants. Rest easy my friend, for your purpose in this life was given to you and you will stop at nothing until you do that which you have promised yourself. Prepare yourself once more,



Delphine, for the time has come to stand and fight against the creatures of the Night.

## I

His name is Ragnar of Midland. He is the Ranger and a Demon Hunter. And like the Ebony Warrior, he goes into the lands of the Earth and he fights his way against the Demons that roam this Earth. Like Delphine, he lived a tragic childhood and he was found and was also given a purpose in this life that he lived. For no more will he hide in the shadows and watch as the Demons devour more of his people and regret that he went the other way.

Delphine gets herself up from the ground and she puts on her clothes and her Armor that she carried around. Her long blonde hair breezes along with the wind that blew heavily around her and it revolves as she looks around herself. Then, she puts on her cape and she wraps it around her back as she looks down to the ground and stares at the grass. She uses her Cape mostly because it protects her from being seen while hiding in the shadows and moving from place to place and also to cover herself as she sleeps. Then, she puts on her boots and she puts her gauntlets onto her arms as she is getting ready to move to another place.

And finally, Delphine gets her Weapons and she puts it on her back, these Weapons were her Bow, her Arrows and her two-edged Sword. She called her blade the Crissagrim, She forged this Weapon mostly for killing even the strongest Demons that stood in her way. After wrapping her Weapons on her back, she begins to walk towards a cliff and she sees the Lands before her. The Moon was out and she sees all of the Lands that were before her in this moment at a time when the Demons were around. Then, she stares at the Moon that was before her as her long Blonde hair flowed with the wind that breezed before her.

"Here they come, again." she said. "The Demons, the Hordes of Hell, the creatures of the Night. They have returned and they will not claim me today, for I shall hunt them down. There will be none left living to tell their stories, only songs of the most High will be sung."

And so, Delphine walked away from the cliff and she started her way towards the Road that went Ever on and on. The Road goes ever on and on, down to the door where it began, now far ahead the Road has gone and Delphine must follow if she can. She started her way north and she continued to walk on this road that went on forever and she did nothing more than stare out to the World. The World felt empty and not so many people were out during this time when the

Demons were in this World. And as the Demons were in this World, life was different and there was no peace in the hearts of the people.

Then, Delphine began to feel something in her Soul that she could not so easily get out of her mind for it was revolving heavily around her. "They're here." She said. "But they would not live to see another day. Their death will not be a gentle one."

A group of Demons began to rise from the ground and they began shriek as their bodies were standing onto the ground. The Sky was dark and the Moon began to be covered in blood as Delphine continued to walk on this long and Dark Road. The Demons began to surround her and they pulled out their Swords and their Axes and they pointed them at her. The Weapons of the Demons were razor sharp and they could slice even the strongest of any Armor you could imagine. Then, Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and she began to point her blade at them as they stare at her in this Night.

Then, the Demons began to charge quickly towards her to cut her down as Delphine kept her distance as she wielded her Sword. Then, Delphine began to charge after them as she pointed her directly at them on this Dark and cold night. She then uses her Sword and she began to Kill all of those Demons that stood before her, they could not so easily block her

attacks. She cuts off their heads, she cleaves them open, and she slices them in half all in brutal and violent manners. Blood splattered all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground as Delphine continued to kill all of the Demons.

Delphine was no ordinary Warrior to be killed by the Demons, for she has fought her way through almost her entire life. Her whole life was just her fighting her way and trying to survive the many Nights but none had ever tried to cut her down. And so, she continued on and she fought on to the Death against those creatures that would stand before her. Delphine has the body of a Human but the Soul and Spirit of a Devil for the Grim Reaper made her what she is now. She was very fast in skill and strength, her Sword was crafted to kill even the Strongest Demons that roamed in the depths of Hell.

And so, the battle between Delphine and the Demons ended, there were no more who could stand against her. Then, the Moon was no longer covered in Blood and the Stars began to show in the Sky once again in this Night. Every time a Demon or even a Dozen Demons would be roaming around this land then the Moon would be covered in Blood. Then, Delphine began to walk on this long and Dark Road again as she continued to search for the Ranger. The Ranger was also awake during this time as the

Demons roamed this Earth and he only focused on swinging his Sword.

The Road was a long Road, a Dark Road that went Ever on and on and never seemed to end as the Lands were around this place. The Lands of the Earth used to be filled with all sorts of life and the Animals used to roam around the many plains of these Lands. That all changed, however, as the Demons began to roam this Earth and the Daedra ruled the Kingdoms of the Earth. The Kingdoms used to be ruled by, of course, Kings and Queens that ruled with a powerful hand and they fought against their enemies in times of War. But the Kings and Queens were no more as the Daedra overthrew them all and took the Kingdoms as their own.

## II

Meanwhile, the Ranger came and he was also walking on this long and Dark Road that laid heavily before him. The Ranger was like any Ranger, a skilled Hunter and a powerful Warrior who hunts the Night Creatures. He also lived a cruel life of slavery and Death by the Demons that came here and brought Death to all of those who were against them. He chose the life of a Ranger when he was just a Teenager and he hunted the Night and lived like a Hunter for about

as long as he could remember. He Hunted the Demons and the many monsters of this World for twelve years and he has gotten used to this life that he had.

Suddenly, Ragnar saw before himself many corpses of people that were devoured by the Demons and they were all brutally murdered. Their Blood and their Gore stained the ground that they were on and their heads were severed and their arms and legs were devoured by the Night creatures. Ragnar walked through this plain of dead bodies and he moved on and he stared on into the World as his feet walk through these corpses. Ragnar carried a Long, two-edged Steel Sword that he carried on his back and he had many Arrows and a long Bow and he had a Cape on as well. Ragnar proved himself quite useful with these Weapons that he carried wherever he went and wherever he goes.

The Night still went on as he continued to walk his way through the Night Killing any Demon that he ever saw before himself. Then, he began to see before himself a City that had a large glowing red light that glows onto a large Tower. This City was indeed being controlled by a Daedra and the City was crawling with Demons and the Daedra sat on it's Throne. And so, Ragnar Continued to walk on the Long Road towards the City that was being controlled by the Daedra. Ragnar was simply someone who would go towards

many unusual places especially if it ever meant to actually getting there without knowing why.

And as he got closer, the City began to grow taller as the gates were before the entrance as he kept walking towards it. Ragnar always knew that there was a Daedra sitting on the Throne of each kingdom of this Earth and nobody could ever take them down. A Daedra could not be so easily taken down by a mere Human because they were the strongest of all of the Demons. And so, Ragnar went Ever closer to the city as the Night continued onward and the Moon shown brightly in the Sky. Ragnar wore Leather Armor as he walked the many Roads of this Earth and it has never let him down as he went onward.

And from a Distance, Delphine sees Ragnar walking towards the city as the Night went on and the City was being under Daedric Control. "This must be him," she said to herself. "The Ranger. What's he doing here at a time like this? Something about this Ranger is different, no other man would ever set foot in a Kingdom during this time."

Then, she began to hear a voice go in her head as she stared at Ragnar walking towards the City as she stood at a faraway distance. It was the Wolf Queen who spoke in her head. "This is him, Delphine." She said. "This is the one that I mentioned to you. Go to him, for he is indeed the Ranger that fights these

Demons all by himself. While you are there, lend him aid and comfort, for the path ahead is too difficult for such a one as this."

And so, the Wolf Queen left Delphine alone and she leaves her for now as she wanders off into the Abyss and wanders the lands of the Earth. Delphine has found the Ranger and now she must go to him for he is the one that she has been looking for.

### III

Ragnar reaches the City Gates as the Night goes on and ever more the Demons roam the Earth as the Sun does not give it's light. A few Demons spotted Ragnar as he continued to walk forward towards them as the Night Sky continued to be visible. "You must have Rocks in your Head." a Demon said. "This is a City under Daedric Control and you are one Man."

Ragnar did not pay attention nor heed the Words that the Demon spoke to him as he was standing besides the City Gate. "You Trespass here, Human!" The Demon shouted, "Go Home And never come here, again!" Ragnar remained silent and he did not speak a Word towards the Demon as he continued to walk towards them. The Demon saw something in him as he walked forward towards them and Ragnar did not



look back and did not go away for he wouldn't leave without a fight.

"You wish to Die?! So be it!" And so, the Demon went towards the Ranger and he charged after him to kill him and he pulls out his Sword. Then, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he keeps his distance as the Demon ran ever closer towards him. The Demon has red Eyes and it was very tall and his Sword was Razor Sharp as he pointed his Sword at him.

Then, Ragnar raises his blade and then with all of his strength, he swings his Sword at him and he slices off his head. And as he sliced off the Demon's Head, all of those Demons that were standing there began to stare at Ragnar. And so, the Moon began to be covered in Blood again as the Demons shriek in the air and they pull out their Swords and Axes and were ready for Battle. Ragnar begins to charge after them as they charge after him as well as they point their Weapons at each other. Ragnar was known to be a Hunter that would fight to the Death against his Enemies and would not leave until every last one of them was dead.

And so, Ragnar fought on and he killed those Demons with the Sword that was on his hand and he did not turn back. He blocked every last one of their attacks and then he dodged their every blow that they tried to give him. Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that

they were standing upon. He fought only with his Sharp Blade and he cuts down every last one of those Demons that stood before him, except for one. Only one Demon was left alive and he was covered in large Scars and scratches that Ragnar gave to him with his Sword.

"There's an Army of us!" The Demon shouted. "An Army... from Hell!" Then, before the Demon could say anything else, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and then he Slices off the Demon's Head. And so, the battle between Ragnar and those Demons ended, but he knew that he needed to fight more and more Demons.

It was still Night time and the Moon was still covered in Blood as the Battle between him and the rest of the Demons continued on. Then, Ragnar keeps walking forward and he reaches past the City gates that were before him and he still walked on. The City Gates were, of course, the main entrance into the City as the Palace had a large light surrounding it. And so, Ragnar opens the front doors of the City and he continues to walk forward towards the Palace. Ragnar didn't see any Demon that was before him and he didn't see nor come to sense that there was nobody here.

"Someone must've already been here. But who... and why?" He said to himself. There was a mystery going on around here and he wanted to know what it

is that was happening since all of them were already dead. And so, he kept going towards the palace and he stopped at nothing to reach the Palace of this Kingdom.

But suddenly, there was a Demon that was before him, but just one and he stared at him to the eye and he wished to fight him. Ragnar did not hesitate and he never even wanted to know what this Demon wanted from him and he didn't care. And so, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he was ready for another Battle and then, the Demon also pulls out his Blade and he points it at him. And so, another battle began and Ragnar was ready for anything that would be in his path and there was nothing more he could do. Ragnar and the Demon dueled each other to the Death, their Swords clashed with each other and each one of them blocked each one's attack.

The Demon held and steadied his balance as Ragnar kept clashing with him and Ragnar balances himself as well. Ragnar was a Warrior and a Ranger, and he was glad-hearted in Battle and he fought on against this Demon. Ragnar always saw the Demons as pathetic and unholy Creatures of the Night that must be cut down for the greater good. His Destiny was to destroy the great Evil that lives and breathes in the Lands of the Earth and he would chase them to the Ends of the Earth. Nothing held him back as he stood

and fought against the creatures of the Night and nothing will ever hold him back.

## IV

And so, Ragnar slashes the Demon down to the ground and the Blood of the Demon covers his Two-Edged Blade. It was a short battle but a battle worth earned and something that has always been some sort of tradition in Ragnar's life. And then, he walks towards the Demon to speak with him for he knew that he had something to say. "Where is he that rules this Kingdom?" Ragnar asked.

"Why must you know, Human?" The Demon asked. Then, Ragnar points the Sword towards his Throat and he began to interrogate him some more so he could have something to say. "Where is he?" He asked.

"I got nothing to say to you, Hunter!"

"Talk, or I will Water the ground with your Blood and figure it out, myself!"

"He is in the Palace, he sits on the Throne! I swear, that's all I know!"

Then, Ragnar puts his Great-Sword back to his sheathe and then, he stares at the Demon into his eyes so he could stare directly at him. "Leave... And never return." He said. And so, Ragnar continues his way

towards the Palace to meet with whatever Enemy would be waiting for him. He knew what the kind of Enemy that he would face since that this was an Enemy that could be stronger than any Demon.

Ragnar makes it towards the Palace and he opens the front Door and he goes in to meet with whoever was in this place. And as he makes it in, he sees a bunch of Stairs that led upwards towards the Throne Room and he meets his Enemies. On the Throne sat the Daedra, an Ancient Demon who was far stronger than any Demon that roamed the pits of Hell. And so, he walks towards this Daedra to meet him and finish him off before he could do anymore damage. The Daedra calls his Demons whom he controlled and he commands them to do his bidding, saying, "He has no place in this Kingdom. Finish Him off and bring me his Head!"

And so, the Demons began to charge after him and they pull out their Swords and their Axes and they began to charge after Ragnar. Then, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he began to charge after them and he began to kill them all. He swings his Sword and he blocks all of their attacks and he dodges their every move that they give him. Then he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open as they try to kill him but they all fall down. Lots of Blood

began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that he was standing on.

And so, that group of Demons were now dead and then Ragnar begins to charge towards the Daedra to finish him off. But then, the Daedra holds out his hand and he holds him back with his force powers that every Daedra used. And then, the Daedra began to talk with him as he was standing still and he could not move, saying, "No man can hinder me, I am immortal. I cannot be defeated by Humans and I cannot be defeated by you. Before the End, you will bow down to me.

"Now, Submit to your Destiny!" And then, the Daedra puts his right hand on Ragnar's face and he began to feel his whole face turning. And as that happened, his eyes began to glow red and all appeared to be lost as Ragnar was onto the ground. Suddenly, a large Black Arrow comes flying towards the Daedra and it hits his right Eye and he began to fall back. Then, Ragnar began to come back to his senses and he was back to normal again and he sees a tall black figure coming quickly towards him.

It was Delphine who was coming towards him and she faces the Daedra before her and she looks at Ragnar and she says to him, "Get up, Ranger!" Then, Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and she begins to kill the rest of the Demons that were with the Daedra

and then she cuts off the Daedra's hand. "Bring me her Head!" The Daedra Shouted. There were just a few more Demons that were with the Daedra and they were all ready for a fight to the Death.

So Delphine goes over to them and then she begins to kill them all brutally and Violently in this Palace. She cuts off their heads, she slices them in half, and she cleaves them open as fast as she could and they all fell to the ground and were dead. "You will not claim him today!" She shouted. "Go back to whence you came, you filthy beast!"

And so, Ragnar and Delphine fought to the death against the Daedra as they were in this Palace during this time. They all fought against the Daedra for a long while and they fought until the morning Sun began to rise up. They fought on until the Daedra began to lose balance and lose control of himself and then he loses his Sword as it flies away. Ragnar then stabs the Daedra on his back, while Delphine stabbed him in the chest. The Daedra yielded and he could no longer stand against them as he began to feel himself fading away.

Then, Delphine uses her Greatsword and then she slices off the Daedra's head as it flies into the air and it falls onto the ground. And so, the Daedra was dead and nobody else could ever sit on the Throne that was before them all. And then, Ragnar and Delphine

began to stand there and they look at each other for a long while before doing anything else. "So, you came. I figured that you're the Ranger that I've heard so much about." Delphine said.

"I don't know what you're talking about, Woman." Ragnar said.

"I'll explain on our way out of here. We need to speak with each other. It is of very importance. Follow me."

And so, Ragnar began to follow Delphine out of the Throne Room and they began to leave the palace and be outside.

## V

They left the City and they came by a Tree that was about a Mile away from the City and then they stood there for a while. "I believe you and I have very important business to discuss." Delphine said. "Do we now?" Ragnar said.

"We do. And I believe it's the best time since there appears to be no more Demons for now."

Then, Ragnar walks slowly before Delphine and then she took off her hood and then her hair began to show. Again, she had very long blonde hair and she was very beautiful to behold as she stood there and she stares at Ragnar.



"Here I am," He said. "What do you want?"

"I didn't go to all of this trouble on a whim," she said. "I needed to make sure that it wasn't a trap from those Demons. I'm not your enemy. I've helped you out with that Daedra. I just need you to hear me out."

"You'd better start explaining. Fast."

"I'll explain what I want when I want, got it? You'd already be dead if I didn't like the look of you when you set foot into this place. But I had to know if the rumors about you were true. I've been looking for you... well, someone like you for a very long time. If you really are that much of a Hunter, that is. Before I can tell you anymore, I need to make sure I can trust you."

"How do I know I can trust you?"

"If you don't trust me, then you were a fool to walk in here in the first place."

"Why are you looking for someone like me?"

"I remember what most don't? That a strong Warrior such as yourself can take down these Demons and end Satan's rule and Tyranny. You have proven yourself to me when you killed those Demons. So you have more experience with hunting down Demons like I do. Tell me, what was it like when you killed your first Demon?"

"It wasn't the first thing I ever killed. But I felt terrible when I first killed a Demon and my life

changed forever. And now, I'm used to this life. What about you? How long were you at this part of your life?"

"Oh, I've been at this Game for a very long time. I've been killing many beasts and slain many Demons for as long as I can remember. I'm really good at what I do, perhaps even the best. And I have never ran away from my enemies and death has never frightened me."

"So, What's The Part you're not telling me?"

"Demons aren't just coming back, they're coming back to life. They weren't gone somewhere for all these years. They were dead, killed off centuries ago by the one they call a Shadow Knight. Now, something is happening to bring them back to life and I need you to help me stop it."

"Do you know how crazy this sounds?"

"Funny. Many years ago, I said almost the same thing to a friend of mine. Well, it turned out that he was right and I was wrong."

"What makes you think that Demons are coming back to life?"

"I know they are. I visited many cities and most of the people either escaped or got devoured by them and the rest of them stayed behind to defend the walls of the cities. It's probably for the better if we split up and venture into those cities and defeat all of the Daedra so the Lands of the Earth can be in peace, once

again. When I hear word that the city is saved and you succeeded, then I will tell you everything that you need to know."

"So where am I going?"

"You're going East and I am going South from here. I will go and I will defeat all of those Demons that live and breathe in that land and I will make sure that they do not live to see another day. You're going East and you're gonna go Kill whoever is the leader that brings those Demons back to life. We must bring peace back to these Lands and we will find whomever's responsible for bringing all of these Demons to these Lands before he can Summon Satan to this Earth. Do we have an agreement?"

"Yes. We have an agreement."

"Good, the Lands need people like me and you to save them. Once we kill their leader, the Demonic invasions will cease in this Earth."

"Before I am out, I have something to ask you."

"Of course, what is it that you need?"

"Who are you. What are you?"

"My name is Delphine. Delphine of Moria. I am known by many as the Ebony Warrior."

"The Ebony Warrior? The Dark Warrior of Song and Legend. The one who sent Satan back to Hell, all those years ago?"

"Yes. It is I. I am the one who has done all of that all of those years ago. And what about you? What is your name?"

"My name is Ragnar. Ragnar of Midland. Well, I guess I shall be on my way now. Farewell, Delphine."

"Our paths will cross again. I am glad to have you on my side, Ragnar. The road ahead is perilous and Demons will come at you at a time that you will not expect. I hope you have readied yourself on the Road ahead."

"I'm ready as I will ever be."

"Good. Go then, fight to the Death against those wretched creatures and fight with Honor. Farewell."

And so, Ragnar and Delphine left the City and the Palace and they were well on their way out into the World. They both parted ways in their journey. The road ahead is indeed dark and perilous. The Age of Darkness approaches and Ragnar and Delphine's War against the Demons begins. Dark times are indeed ahead for Ragnar and the Ebony Warrior.

## **CHAPTER 2: TEMPTATIONS**

Delphine has come face to face with the Ranger as they were standing before the City which they have killed the Daedra. Delphine explains to Ragnar that she needs someone like him to help her on her Journey to Kill the Demons and find the Daedric Lords. Ragnar agrees to her explanation on which she brought before him during this Time and in this place. Delphine explains to Ragnar that she is the Ebony Warrior and she was the one that many remembered as the one who defeated the Grim Reaper and sent Satan back to Hell. And then, they departed and they were well on their way as they move on into the World Killing any Demon that stood in their way.

Beware, Ragnar, for even though your Journey is just beginning, the Road ahead for you will not be easy to accomplish. Perhaps, this was the only way of this life to live and to survive or perhaps this was the only purpose in life. Ragnar didn't care about the Dangers of the World and he could stand up to anything that could be in his path. Beware, Delphine, you may call yourself The Ebony Warrior and you may say that you have cut down many Demons but know that The Devil will always have his due. The pain that you suffer through even through your own past will be with you

from now until the End of Days, your suffering will always lie with you.

## I

Ragnar finds himself wandering around in the Desert to see what other place is out there where man Demons lurk. It was into the Far East that Ragnar kept wandering around in the Desert and there was nothing but more and more Sand. Afterwards, he was very thirsty, for he drank nothing during the time he was on the long Road in the Desert. One day, he was still walking on the long Road and he found a large stone and then he lays down next to it to rest. When it was daytime it was very, very hot but when it was nighttime it was very, very cold while he walked on this Dark Road.

Soon afterwards, he was tempted by Satan during his travels in the Desert, Satan stared at him for a moment trying to analyze him. "Six whole days of walking on this Road and still he lives." Satan said. "He has great strength indeed." Ragnar looks up and sees him; the Devil, The King of Darkness, Satan as he was resting himself upon the Large Stone.

"You need help." Satan Said. "No." Ragnar replied.

"But you will die soon."

"I will not die... until I have finished that which I have started."

"What you started?"

Then, Ragnar gets himself up from the ground and he began to stare at Satan as he was questioning him while he was resting. "Wiping the evil out of this land and defeating any Demon that lives and breathes on this Earth," He said. "And finding the one responsible for all of this." Satan laughs and he follows Ragnar as he was walking away from him and wanting to be left alone from this creature. Satan does not stop following Ragnar as he was still walking away and Satan began to test him and question him.

"Why do you fight?" Satan asked. "Why throw away your own life to save these beings?"

"I will suffer... far worse than this for the sake of my people," Ragnar said. "I will not rest until every last one of you is driven out of the lands of the Earth."

"Prove it to me... here... now."

Satan backs away from Ragnar a little bit where he was standing and he was trying to tell Ragnar something. "Go ahead, Kill me," He said. "Put me out of my misery." The Sky grows darker as Satan was speaking with Ragnar and the Moon did not turn to Blood for there weren't any Demons around, just Satan.



"Come on," He said. "Your hunger and thirst will be satisfied. In fact, I would fall down and worship you forevermore."

"Get out of my head," Ragnar said. "You're nothing more but an illusion. You're not here and you're not real. I know... who you are... and you know I am."

And as he said this, Satan began to walk away from Ragnar and he began to disappear from the Earth and then Ragnar finds somewhere else to sleep. Then, Satan came for him again and he led him to a city and he had Ragnar stand on the highest point of the palace. Ragnar looks down and he sees the many people going about their daily lives and wandering around in the city to see what they can do.

"There they are," Satan said. "The people that you have come to save. But first, they must believe. Join me. Bow before me, take all that you have left. All you need to do is utter the phrase from the bottom of your heart, 'I submit'. And you shall be given Raven black wings upon which you shall soar the Heavens. When the people see you flying in the clouds and soaring the skies, then they will believe. Then they will know that you have come to save them!"

And as Satan said this before Ragnar, Ragnar lets Himself up from the ground and he began to stare at him in confusion and Anger. "You dare send me to do

your bidding?" He asked. "Once again your fine words are worth nothing." And then, the sun began to light up in the clouds and the people began to look up and see that Sun has appeared again.

Ragnar sits himself down and then he covers his face with his eyes for he was still in Temptation as he was crossing the Desert. Then, Satan comes for him once more and then he has led him up to a very high place.

## II

On this very high place, Satan shows Ragnar in an instant all the Kingdoms of the Earth. Then, Ragnar sees Satan standing before him as he was staring at all the Lands of the Earth before him. "I am prepared to give it all to you." Satan said.

"...It's not yours... to give." Ragnar said.

"It is mine to give! It is MINE! The people of this World obey my voice! I have Power... Powers you have never seen!"

And so, Satan commands a great and large twister to descend down to the Earth as he and Ragnar stood onto the high Mountain. And suddenly, great bolts of lightning were cast down to the Earth as they stood there and watch as the power of Satan was hovering down. Then, Satan shows Ragnar all the

riches and the powers of the World inside of the Great and large Twister.

"Vineyards and orchards!" Satan shouted. "Gold and Silver! Palaces, Thrones, Crowns! Land therein! Flocks, Herds! Kings and Armies, Swords and Spears!

"This is Power and it can be yours if you do this one Thing. If you will bow down and worship me, I will give to you the whole World." Satan then shows Ragnar another illusion, this time it shows Ragnar sitting on a Throne with a Servant putting a crown on his Head. Then, the Servant gives Ragnar his Sword, then the Captain of the Guard gives him Armor to put on. Then in the illusion it shows Ragnar on the battlefield killing hundreds of Enemies and his foes.

And it shows Ragnar conquering all the Lands of the Earth and him being served by all people. Then, the illusion ends and it fades away and then Ragnar begins to Stare at Satan once again. "Now you understand who I am," Satan said. "I am the one who will rule all the Lands of the Earth and I am the supreme being who will rule a Kingdom that will never end. My Kingdom will be the Greatest of all the Kingdoms that have ruled this Earth for as long as they could remember.

"I shall rule over all creation and I shall not be defeated by those who will dare take me down for I am more mightier than any Mortal that has ever lived or

breathed. And once Humanity has seen that I have come, they will obey me and they will serve me for all eternity. Join me, Ranger. I will make you immortal and I will give you all and make you powerful and mightier than your Enemies."

And so, Ragnar looked down to the ground and the thought came to him and he realizes that he cannot allow himself to fall into temptation. He realized that Satan was testing him while he was crossing this Long and Dark Road and this will be of many Temptations for him that will come to pass. Ragnar knew that he must never let this happen to him for he knew better than what Satan would give him. Even if he surrendered to Satan, it would be his greatest Downfall if he surrendered and gave in to Darkness. Then, he looks up to Satan and he spoke to him some more as he stood there and stared at him while in Temptation.

"DO AS I COMMAND!!" Satan Shouted. "FALL DOWN AND WORSHIP ME, THE GOD OF THIS WORLD!!"

Ragnar still did not listen to a Word that Satan would ever say to him while he was standing here before him. Then, he pulls out his Greatsword and he points it at Satan and Satan stood there and he did not move anywhere. "I cannot allow this," Ragnar said. "As long as I have breath in my body, my Fate is my own!"

Ragnar held onto his Greatsword and he points it at Satan and he stood there and was ready to fight him in this Desert. But Satan just stands there and so Ragnar charged quickly towards him and he was ready to strike him down. "GET OUT OF MY HEAD!!" He shouted. Ragnar swings his long Sword and he cleaves Satan but his body did not cleave open nor split in two, he stares back at Satan and walks towards him and he was pointing his Sword at him and then he pierced his heart.

"So, you still persist?" Satan asked. "I'm no fool, Ragnar of Midland. Crossing Blades with you would be nothing more than a Death Sentence. I promise you the next time we meet, it will be your undoing."

And so, Satan left him and Ragnar's Temptation ended, Ragnar Continued on into the Desert and did not look back. About two hours later of more walking, Ragnar finally finds some grass and many trees, he did not waste any time, he ventures towards that piece of land and towards the large trees. He comes across a long Road that was before him and he decided to get onto it and he continued his way forward onto this long and Dark Road. Suddenly, Ragnar began to see a Carrier from behind him ride on into the Long Road and he was behind him. The Man was riding the carriage and he was an old man and a traveler with

two of his young daughters and the man went before him and he spoke with him.

The old Traveler's name is Gallus and his oldest Daughter's name is Aela and his younger daughter's name is Iris. "Do you need a Ride?" Gallus asked. "The Road is Very Long and you appear to be weary and Thirsty."

"No," Ragnar replied. "Let me be."

"It's no trouble. There's more than enough room for another person in here."

"Sorry, but I'm not used to riding with Travelers."

"It's better than catching a cold though, yes?"

Ragnar remained silent for a moment and he did not speak a Word towards Gallus for he couldn't come to any terms of it.

### III

Then, Ragnar gave in and he turns his face towards Gallus and he began to speak with him as he waited for an answer. "I'm telling you this for your own good. The reason why I'm here is because there are Demons lurking around here. A legion of them."

Then, Gallus began to stare at him for a long while before he could do anything else, and then he spoke to him again, saying, "That's quite an affliction."

But don't worry, my friend. I have God on my side. So, we will give you all sorts of aid and comfort." Then, Ragnar thought of it for a moment and he did not know what else to say to Gallus or what else to do.

"Come on, get in. I'm sure it will spare you the trouble for walking for too long." He said. And so, Ragnar gets himself into the Carriage and they were well on their way again out into the World. Ragnar sat himself down onto the floor of the Carriage and Gallus continued to drive the Carriage.

And as Ragnar sat down, both Alea and Iris stared directly at Ragnar for a long while as they continued to ride in the Carriage. Then, Aela began to move closer to him and she began to stare at him deep in the eye and she began to speak with him, saying, "I've never seen you before so I suppose that you're new around here. Why are you here and what do you want?"

"I'm just passing through." Ragnar said.

"Look all around you, Traveler," Aela said.

"There's nothing to see in these Lands. All a man will ever see in these are lands are nothing more than eternal torment and Death. That is why we left our home, we're searching far and wide to look for someplace but all we see is nothing. The Demons look for anyone that is around these parts and they devour

them. The Demons start attacking us and we are left defenseless.

"Each and every single day, we lose more of our people, our numbers grow weaker, but their armies grow larger and stronger. Oh, I'm sorry. Sometimes when people talk about Demons, some people go devoutly mad. Now, what do you want from us?"

"May I bother you for a Cup of Water?"

"Well, we don't have that much water, but you can have a bottle of Ale."

"Thank You."

And so, Ragnar did not speak that much and he didn't bother Alea some more, he went for the bottle of Ale and he drinks only a Quarter of it. And then, he gives it back to Aela and he begins to have some strength enter back inside of him. And so, they rode off some more into the day and they continued onward into the place where the many trees and the long Road was. Meanwhile, Iris began to move closer towards Ragnar and then she began to ask him a question or two as they were sitting down.

"May I speak with you?" Iris asked.

"Yeah. Sure." Ragnar said.

"Do you have a name?"

"I'm Ragnar. Ragnar of Midland. And you are?"

"My name is Iris. Do you know exactly why you're out here?"



"I'm here to kill all of these monsters that stand in my way. I am a Ranger, a Hunter that has roamed the lands for about as long as I can remember. I'm here because I have heard that there will be Demons in this place and they will come at a time that you do not expect. I'm here to either save these people or avenge them. I'm also here because I must be here to defeat every single demon that lives and breathes."

"I don't know how a person like you can go on like that. I don't know why this happened to all of us and I never figured it out. And nobody has ever told me so and they probably never will. I keep hearing about it every day that these Demons are appearing everywhere without warning and without delay. Was this bound to happen to us? Is it just bad luck?"

"Bad luck, eh? Well where I'm from, it's beyond bad luck. I'm a hunter, a Ranger that has more experience with these Demons than anyone else in these Lands."

"I also heard many stories about Rangers. Some people are saying that they have gone extinct and others are saying that they got devoured by the Demons. But apparently, you're the first one that I ever met and they say that Rangers are Heartless and they don't care about the World nor its problems. Do you care about the World? How dangerous is it out there for someone like you?"

"It's indeed a dangerous road, and it's a dangerous path for someone like you to go on. If you stick with me then maybe you might make it out alive. And if you need some training along, then come to me and I can teach you everything that I know."

Then, a moment later Aela began to move closer towards Ragnar and she also wanted to speak to him about something and so she did. "You're a long way from home, Ragnar. What are you doing out here in Times like this? Why throw away your own life to fight these beings?"

"What I do in this World is not your concern," Ragnar said. "I may have chosen this life but I did not choose to run away from home. I fight because there is no other way and I fight because I must."

Then, Gallus began to hear the conversation that Ragnar was having with Iris and Aela while they were still riding the Carriage. "Careful, Ranger. Don't frighten my Daughters too much."

"Fine." Ragnar said. Then, he heeded the words of Gallus and they didn't say another word, Ragnar then lays his head down and he gets some rest.

## IV

And as he rested, Ragnar began to have a dream and he had a vision that was laying before him and

starring deep into him. In this dream, he was just a teenage Boy and he was at home and he was sitting on his bed with his mother with him. His mother brought him some soup for he was not feeling any good and his mother cared for him while he was on his bed. This was the time before he became what he is now and this was before he began this life that he has chosen for himself.

"Ragnar?" His mother asked.

But he did not give her any response for he did not know what else to say to her for it was all too much for him to bear. "Ragnar." His mother called his name again. But he did not look up to her and he could not speak a Word towards her for he had nothing to say to her. "What are we going to do with you?" His mother asked him.

"You must be tired of all of these lectures and I know I'm tired of giving them," his mother said. "Now, you have to stay with me all weekend instead of go with your father to be out hunting with him."

"I don't care." Ragnar said.

"Yes, that is the crux of the problem."

"I don't understand why he won't leave me alone and let me be."

"Because, you can't be here forever all by yourself and everyone else is out there."

"I have too many important things to do."

"What things?"

"It's none of your business."

"It is my business and it will always be my business."

Ragnar spoke nothing more to his mother and he had nothing further to say to her and he never cared about speaking with her. "I just want to be left alone. I have so many things to write down and there is a whole world out there just waiting for me." He said. His mother knew better for she was the one that raised him as her mother and his Father was a strong Warrior.

"I don't know what I've done to make you angry." His mother said. "I don't know what it is that made you like this, but I'm always here to offer you aid and comfort even if you don't want it."

"I understand." Ragnar said.

"Please, eat your soup. You want your strength back, don't you?"

Then, his mother left him and she left his room and she left alone and then Ragnar drinks and eats a little bit from the soup. Suddenly, in the Vision, Ranger looks outside and he sees that he is no longer in his house and he is in the middle of nowhere. He sees the Sky turn to darkness and he sees that the Moon gets covered in Blood and he feels many drops of Blood fall onto him. And then, he sees Lagertha, the Wolf Queen

walk slowly towards him as he stands there and he tries to figure out what is going on. The Wolf Queen stares directly at him and she puts her hands onto his shoulders and she pulls him closer towards him.

"Who are you? Tell me who you are!" Ragnar shouted.

The Wolf Queen continues to stare directly at him to answer him the way she chooses to answer anyone she comes across with. "...Your Redemption." She said. Then, she wraps her arms around him and she hugs him and she holds onto him and she warms him up with her arms. Ragnar began to feel strength enter into him as the Wolf Queen held onto him and hugged him for a long while.

Suddenly, the Grim Reaper appeared behind Ragnar but also in front of the Wolf Queen as she stands there and stares at him. The Grim Reaper moves slowly towards them and Lagertha keeps protecting him with her Arms as Death itself creeps closer towards them. Then, the Grim Reaper lifts up his Scythe and it appears that he killed the both of them but his Vision ends and the Dream leaves him before something else would happen. Ragnar opens his eyes and he was back again in reality and he was still inside of the Carriage that Gallus was driving on. But to his knowledge and from what he understands,

nobody was inside of the Carriage both Alea, Iris and Gallus were not inside of here.

And so, Ragnar lets Himself up and he gets out of that Carriage to see where everyone went and why did they stop moving. "What happened?" He asked. "Why did we stop?" But nobody answered him and they did not look at him but they stared directly at the Horse that was with them.

The Horse is dead, it was shot by four Black Arrows and they all stared as the Horse's blood and Gore began to stain the ground. "Where did these Arrows come from?" Aela asked. "What is happening around here?" Iris asked.

"I'm gonna find whoever did this." Gallus said. Then, Ragnar walks towards the three of them and they began to make eye contact with Ragnar as he stood there. They were all shocked and were terrified with what happened as they witness this gruesome image before their very eyes. Then, the Horse begins to move his eyes and he began to see the both of them as they stood and saw that he lived again but not as any ordinary horse.

The Horse was now possessed by a Demon and the Horse's Eyes began to glow red and it gave a loud demonic Roar. Then, Ragnar charged over to the Horse and he swings his Greatsword and he slices off the head of the Horse and now it was dead. Nobody ever

knew what just happened and they couldn't come to any sense on how or why it happened to this Horse.

## V

Ragnar began to stare at the three of them as they see that he killed the Horse with his Sword as they see the Horse's decapitated head. "It was possessed by a demon." He said. "These Arrows are inflicted with a Toxic poison that with just one shot it will turn you and make you become like them. The only way now is to put them out of their misery, once they've been taken, there's no way that they will ever become their normal selves ever again."

And so, Gallus, Iris and Aela Continued to stare at Ragnar as he told them this horrifying thing that will happen to them. Suddenly, a large group of Demons began to surround them all as they stood there and were in total shock. The Demons pointed their Swords and their Axes at them as they were ready for more bloodshed. The Sky began to become Dark and the Moon began to be covered in Blood as they all stood there and stared at each other. Then the leader of that group of Demons stepped forward and he slowly moved towards the four of them.

Ragnar also steps forward and he gets in front of Gallus, Iris and Aela so he can protect them from the Demons. "Who are you?" He asked the Demon.

"We are your death. We are Legion. We are the Undead. We are the ones who rule the regions of this Earth. You are now surrounded, surrender. Our Lord and Master commands it!" The Demon answered.

"No. We do not surrender to the hands of Satan. We will not let you stand in our way." Ragnar said.

"So, you don't wish to surrender? You wish to die then?"

"I am not afraid of Death, unholy Demon. Your Schemes and your ways of life are over."

"Because you say so?"

"It ends so I can take you all down?"

"You know nothing, you are nothing. My plans endure in the name of Satan, Lord of the Earth and King of the World."

"I will not let you do this. I will not allow you to stand in my way. All Evil shall fall before my Blade and I shall cut you all down. I fight to the Death and I will not give in to utter Darkness. I will not rest until every last one of you Creatures are sent straight back to Hell."

"Good. The Die is cast and my Blade shall taste the blood of a Ranger!" And so, that Demon commanded his followers to do his bidding and they



move closer towards Ragnar. And then, Gallus slowly gets himself up and then he pulls out his short Sword and he points it at them. Then, Aela gets herself up and she also pulls out her Short Sword and she also points it at the Demons as they come towards them.

"Iris," Aela Shouted. "Stay behind me!" And so, Iris did as her sister told her and she stayed behind and she did not move anywhere but there, but she stares as the three of them get ready for Battle. Ragnar was not afraid of Death and he was not afraid of any Demon that would dare stand before him. Then, Ragnar pulls out his Two-Edged Blade and he now points it at the Demons.

"Kill them, now!" The Demon Leader Shouted.

And so, Ragnar charges towards all of those Demons and he begins to kill every last one of them with his Sword. Then, Gallus also charges against those Demons and he also began to kill those Demons that stood before him. And finally, Aela charges against those Demons along with Ragnar and she begins to kill all of those Demons that stood before her. Ragnar Killed more and more Demons than Gallus or Aela, he charged at them and he slices and slashes all of them brutally and Violently. Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on.

Suddenly, the Demon Leader stood from a Distance and he pulls out his Bow and an Arrow and then, he shoots both Gallus and Aela. Gallus was the one that went down but Aela continued to stand up and she began to struggle being alive. Then, the Demon Leader shoots another Arrow at her and it landed onto her Stomach, but she still didn't go down. Iris stared in shock and in fear as her sister was getting shot by the Demon Leader and struggling to stay alive. Then, Ragnar began to charge after the Demon Leader and he stabs him onto his Stomach but he was still standing.

The Demon Leader and Ragnar faced each other and he began to battle with this Leader that the Demons had. Ragnar blocked every single attack and dodged every single move that the Demon Leader gave to him. And the Demon Leader also blocked every single attack and blocked every single move that Ragnar gave to him. Ragnar and the Demon Leader clashed with their Swords on their hands and every blow was like a bolt of lightning. Suddenly, Ragnar swings his Sword at the Demon Leader and he drops his Sword as it flies away.

And with all of his anger and with all of his fury, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he slices off the Demon Leader's head and it falls down. Then, Ragnar runs towards Gallus but then he sees that he is dead

after being shot with that large Arrow. Then, he runs towards Aela as she was gravely Wounded and Iris was holding onto her as she lay dying. "Ranger... Take care of her, please... Iris... he is in charge of you, now. Please... save my people... your people... that is all I ever ask of you." She said.

"I will do it. I promise you." Ragnar said.

"It's getting... dark. I can't... see you. I... feel cold. I am leaving this miserable existence, now. I am joining my father in Death. Farewell... Iris... Farewell... Ranger."

And so, they see Aela draw her last breath and she dies as she lays down on the bloody ground that they all stood on. And Iris wept and she mourned the Death of her sister and Ragnar leaves her alone for a long while before going back to her. It was not the only Tragic thing that ever happened with Ragnar as he was fighting off these Demons. His life was always a cruel and harsh one and it was something that he could never escape from, he had to keep it as his own. A few moments later, Ragnar returns back to Iris so he can speak with her and she listens to what he has to say.

"Iris, I want you to follow me." He said. "Become my follower and travel along with me. You have experienced Hell before your very eyes and now you must fight back against them. It is the only way to live

now in this life, to sacrifice yourself and fight to the Death against these Demons and fight with Honor and hatred against them. Will you come with me? You have nothing else here."

Then, Iris hesitated for a moment and tried to figure out what she wanted to say but then she looks at him and she says to him, "Yes, I'll follow you." "Very good. Let's get going." He said.

And so, Ragnar and Iris were on their way and they left the large forest that was behind them and they were out into the World. They went into another part of the world where many more Demons were lurking and preying on other people. The Road ahead for Ragnar and Iris was long, perilous and Very Dark, together they would face many dangers and slay many Demons and never look back to their past.

## **CHAPTER 3: THE WILD HUNT**

The Ranger took Iris with him and they both walked the Earth together and they were on the Dark Road. The Road was very long and very perilous especially at night with the Demons roaming the world and it's people. The people live here to fight to the death against these wretched creatures that devour any that they see. Those who lived long enough after a long battle were the only lucky ones and the weaker people are doomed to die. The Ranger risked everything to to go his way and save his land from the Demons that live and roam these very lands.

Beware, Ranger for I know what it is that you yearn for, but I also know what it is that you seek in

this life. I can let you see it all through until the end and I can allow you to see that even you can fail to defeat EVERY Demon that you come across. Of course, your Journey is not over yet and probably it never will end, perhaps you are cursed to live until every single Demon is dead. Remember and understand this, Ranger, you have Iris along with you and you must teach her your ways if you wish for her to survive the Night. Farewell, for now.

## I

Ragnar and Iris Continued to walk on the Long Road that was before them all and they were walking until the Afternoon came for them. But it was morning time as they were walking, and Ragnar began to feel tired after all of this Walking that they have done. Ragnar and Iris walk by a nearby tree that was before them and he began to stare at it for some time before doing anything else.

"We will rest here, for now." He said.

"How Long will we be here?" Iris asked.

"We will be here until the Afternoon comes and then we can be on our way, again."

And as he sat down, Iris began to sit down with him and she began to look at him for a few moments

and she began to ask him a question. "Ragnar. What happens now?"

"You Know What happens now," Ragnar said. "We rest here and we go out and we will find you some Armor to where and Weapons to defend yourself with."

"What kind of Armor will you actually give me?"

"The right type of Armor that will suit you perfectly. Trust me, Iris. We will make it through, if only you just stay close with me and you will be alright."

Then, Iris had nothing more to say or ask to Ragnar and then she stares out into the Sky and she begins to see the many clouds that were before her. The clouds of the Sky were still from where they were standing and almost every one of them looked exactly the same. Then, Ragnar began to lie himself onto the Tree and he rests himself from all the things that he has done last night. Iris sees that he was a very tall yet very tired man who hunts the night and barely gets enough sleep for himself. Then, Iris also lies down and she began to get some rest and she covers her legs with her arms and she sits her head down and she rests for a bit.

Then, Ragnar gets himself up a bit and raises his left arm and he wraps it around Iris and he begins to hold onto her and he warms her up. Iris began to feel

that Ragnar was doing this to her and she didn't realize this was happening until now. "What are you doing?" She asked.

"Relax." Ragnar said. "It's gonna be a long yet cold morning. You might as well be warmed up a bit."

"Well, I feel quite fine. Thanks though."

"Sure, no problem. Now, let's get some rest."

And so, Iris lets him warm her up from the cold wind that blew hard onto them and she rests herself with him. She began to feel good that she was being warmed up for it was always being cold in this part of the World. In this part of the World, it was always either really Cold or really warm depending which way anyone would look towards. The same could not be said for the Demons that lurk around here, for they were strong and wicked creatures of the Night. They could not feel any of the Cold Temperatures that were revolving around them neither did they feel the hotter temperatures.

Then, Afternoon came for the two of them and Ragnar opens his eyes and he was awake from his slumber. It took him a while to actually get himself up and then he pulls himself up and now he was fully awake and was ready to move. "Iris. Get up." He patted Iris on her arm to get her up from the ground and they could be on their way again.

"What is it?" Iris asked.



"We must be going. We've rested long enough."  
He said.

"Oh, alright. Where are we going?"

"For now, we're going somewhere to eat first and then we'll be looking for some Armor for you. Now, let's get going."

Then, Ragnar holds out his hand and he pulls Iris up from the ground and she was now standing up with him. And so, they were walking again and they found themselves walking out into the World onto the Long Road Before them. The Road goes ever on and on, over rock and under trees, by caves where never sun has shone, and streams that never find the Sea. They walked onto this long Road and they began to see all of the World before them, the Mountains, the fields, and the trees. They walked on their feet until they come across a little town with an Inn that was before them and only a few people ever walked in here.

And so, they walked inside of the Inn and they began to see the people that were in here and they didn't stare at them, they minded their own business here.

## II

Ragnar and Iris are inside of the Inn and they wait before the Counter Table to order that which they want. "Ready to order?" The Innkeeper asked.

"Give us a second." Ragnar said. And then, they looked at the Menu to see what it is they wanted and there were lots of Ale to choose from. "Plenty of Ale to choose," He said to himself. "Especially for a Ranger."

"You're... a Ranger?" The Innkeeper asked.

"Is there is a problem? I was thinking to myself, that's all."

"Oh, I guess it's alright. So, what I can get you?"

"We'll take Bread and Wine for two. I'll leave the details up to you."

And then, the Innkeeper looked at him for a second and Ragnar paid him with a bag of coins with him. And then, they waited by a table for their food to be ready for them as everyone else began to stare at them. They have never seen a Ranger before, especially in these parts of the Earth and they have never seen one that had a follower. And so, the food and drinks were served for them and they began to dig in and eat while they were in this Inn. Then, Iris began to be a bit worried, for she thought that as she saw the people stare at them, she began to think something about Ragnar.

"Hey Ragnar?" Iris asked.

"What is it?" He asked.

"Do you have a feeling that these people seem to notice something about you?"

"I doubt it. Very rarely do I ever see that these people want something of me for I am more different than the rest. They believed that Rangers are Heartless and cruel beings that only live amongst Monsters. But that, is not true. For I did not become a Ranger simply to live amongst a pack of Wolves, but it was a choice that I have made for myself and I am keeping it. Try not to dwell on what other people think about me and especially you. We should not cause a scene around here."

Then, Iris looked down for a second and she began to look at her Wine that was before her as she was sitting down. She lifts up the Wine and she began to take a few sips from it and she began to taste it for a few seconds and her expression started to change.

"Iris, is there a problem?" Ragnar asked.

"What is in this?" She asked.

"They're cranberries. It's good for you."

"It is so sour. And it has such a weird aftertaste."

"Oh, please. You will be fine, it can't be that bad. We're just eating and drinking here before going anywhere else. You won't go hungry, I promise you."

"I'm not saying now, but later. What if we're going out, and then we realize that there isn't anywhere to look for food or even somewhere to

sleep? What if we happened to be somewhere cold or even hot and we haven't seen anything to Hunt or anything to do since the Demons are around?"

"I will take care of all of your concerns, Iris. I told you how it will be, we will hunt down the Demons together and we will not rest until every last one of them is defeated. And you will be taken care of. Is that clear?"

"Yes, it's clear."

"Good, now back to the matter at hand. We eat and leave."

And so, Ragnar and Iris finish the rest of the food that was on their plate and they left the Inn and they were walking outside again. And as they were walking, they began to see Delphine was also walking before them all and they saw her as her long blonde hair blew with the wind. Then, Ragnar began to walk slowly towards Delphine and he began to feel a bit satisfied and he spoke with her, saying, "Ah, Delphine. It has felt like a long time ever since we last spoke with each other."

"Yes," Delphine said. "Yes it has. I've been out here amongst the living killing any Demon that stands in my way. And I hope that everything went well with your part. And I also have found where another path for us lies."

"Of course," Ragnar said. "I've held my end of the agreement and so have you. So, what is it that you want more from me?"

"I'll try and think about it and once I do, I'll make sure to let you know. And remember that it is with our hand that all that the Demons and the Daedra have wrought will be undone."

Then, Delphine stood there for a moment as she turns around and looks at Iris, the fact that Iris was here troubled Delphine's soul. "Ragnar, Who is this?" She asked.

"Her Name is Iris," He answered. "She is my follower."

This answer that Ragnar gave her put Delphine in sudden shock and her soul had a troubled state of belief. "Do you realize that you are putting risk in her own life as you are?" She Shouted. "Do you realize that you are responsible for whatever damage that will be brought upon her? It would be wise if you let her stay home and not have her with you at times like this."

"She has decided and she has made the choice for herself." Ragnar answered.

Then Delphine looked at Iris again and she moves slowly towards her and she kneels herself down to her and she spoke with her, saying, "You... Iris, isn't it? Cross this road at your own peril. The way

is dangerous and especially at night. I will not let you pass this road."

"But I'm not crossing this road by myself. I'm helping Ragnar." Iris said.

### III

Delphine then began to have a sudden change of heart about her and she began to feel bad for herself after treating Iris spitefully.

"Oh... of course you are," Delphine said. "Forgive me, I did not mean to be intemperate with you. But heed my warning, Iris. Once you cross this Road, then there is no looking back. You must leave everything you love behind and do not ever look back.

"And if you wish to hunt these Demons, then you must steel yourself against them. And you must trust in the strength of your sword arm over myths and legends. If you manage to survive, then you will be known throughout all of the Regions as a true Demon Hunter. And if you don't survive, then you will be devoured and you will be cast away from this land find yourself before the Gates of Hell before you know it. You understand what I'm saying, don't you?"

"I do." Iris answered.

"Good. I'm sure that Ragnar will train you well and soon enough you will be ready to take them on by yourself. Good luck out there. And Ragnar?"

She turns around and she gets herself up from the ground and then she walks back towards Ragnar and she speaks with him, saying, "It would be wise if you buy her a Weapon and some Armor along the way. She will need it, if you have the coin of course."

"Have nothing to fear, I got plenty of coin."  
Ragnar said.

"We will meet again. I still have many important things to do?"

And so, Delphine went her way and she left the Town, then Ragnar looks at a nearby Smith Store and then he looks at Iris. "Wait here," He said. "I'll be right back."

"I'll be right here." Iris said.

Then, Ragnar went inside of the Smith Store and he buys a Steel Sword, a Bow, and some Arrows, and Leather Armor. And then, he goes out of the store and he gives Iris the leather Armor and he spoke with her, saying, "Here. Go somewhere and get that Armor on. You will need it."

And so, Iris went somewhere where no one would see her and there she puts on the Leather Armor and then she walks back towards Ragnar. Then,

Ragnar went before Iris and he spoke with her again, saying, "This Sword... it's yours now."

Ragnar hands Iris the Steel Sword and the Sheathe that holds it and she keeps it with her as she was standing with him. "I want to see if you can survive these Lands," He said. "To survive in these Lands, you must learn how to hunt. Now come, The Evening Star is upon us, here, take these."

Ragnar then handed Iris the bow and the large patch of Arrows, so they went out onto the Road that led onward. They headed North on this Road and as they went on, Iris spoke with Ragnar. "What are we hunting?" Iris asked, "Surely there must be something for us in these wilds."

"You are hunting deer," Ragnar answered. "I am just showing you what I know when I roamed around these very fields."

And so, Ragnar and Iris went on into the wild and the forest kept going in the presence that was before them. And about a minute later, Iris finds deer tracks before her as they were both walking together looking and hunting for this Deer. "Look, tracks!" Iris said.

Then, Iris ran and she began to follow the tracks that were laid down before her as they were following this Road into the Wilds. "Slow down, Iris!" Ragnar said, "You are hunting deer. Not chasing after it."



And so, Iris slowed down and kept following the deer tracks, they were pretty big tracks but they were not too big to be seen so easily. Then, she sneaks behind a large Stone for the deer was before her, it was a big deer and it's blue eyes guided it where the Deer needed to go. And then, Iris pulls out her Bow and an Arrow and she begins to ready it, the Arrows had razor sharp tips attached to them. And Then, Ragnar kneeled Down Before Iris and he spoke with her as she was kneeling down and was ready to shoot this Deer.

"Iris, when you aim, make sure it hits where you want it to hit," Ragnar said. "This Creature Before You is larger than a normal animal, but it also has a weakness like all creatures. Like a man has a Weakness like all men. Now... pull. And relax your arm, hold it steady."

So, Iris used her Arrow on the string and she pulled, she relaxes her arm and she holds it steady just as Ragnar tells her to do it. Then, she closed one eye and aimed for the perfect place to hit the deer, then Ragnar spoke with her again, saying, "Find where you can exactly hit it. Now... release!"

Then, Iris releases the arrow and it lands onto the Deer's arm and the Arrow was still attached to the Deer's body. But the deer did not die, so the deer ran out and escaped from Ragnar and Iris, when the deer

left them, it not only left tracks but it also led a blood trail from it's wound. Iris began to stare out in total confusion and had no idea how or why the Deer didn't die from that Arrow. "That's not possible," Iris said. "I shot it, but it didn't go down."

Then, Ragnar looks at Iris for a few seconds and he moves slowly towards her as she stared onward into the Wild. "Iris... your bow. Give it to me." He said.

Iris began to stare at Ragnar for a few seconds as well and she still had a confused expression after landing an Arrow on that deer. "Give you my bow?" She asked.

"For a moment." He answered.

## IV

So, Iris gives Ragnar her Bow and he stood there for a long while and did not say anything for a few seconds. "You did well, Iris," He said. "The more important thing is you did not miss. But now, the Deer's Guard is up. Now... only fire... when I tell you to fire."

"I'm sorry." She said.

"Do not be sorry... be better. Now... find it."

"Find... it."

Then, Iris nodded her head and slowly and she gets herself up from the ground and then she stares

onward. Then they began to walk away from the large stone and Ragnar and Iris followed the Deer's track and the trail of blood. The track and the trail went on for about a Mile as they continued on and saw this long Road before them. And as they were walking, Iris spoke with Ragnar for she wanted to know more of the things that he himself knew and learned. "Hey Ragnar?" She asked.

"Yes." He answered.

"Can I ask you something?"

"Sure. What is on your mind?"

"Why did you become a Hunter?"

"Why do you want to know?"

"Well, I've seen how strong you are, how capable you are, and how you never run from those Demons. I just want to know why you do it?"

The question, however, troubled Ragnar's heart for it was never in his nature to run away from his enemies. So he spoke with Iris, saying, "I became a Hunter so I can survive. When I was just a lad, my father taught me nothing more than how to wield a Sword. I have fought many battles when I was just a boy, I was thrown out of their legion for having a mind of my own. So I left them... my own family and fought my own battles until this day, and when that day comes, I will find the one responsible for all of this and

I'll put him down before he can summon Satan to this Earth.

"This is why I chose the life I am in right now. This is how I became this, a Hunter, a Survivor, and a Ranger. But enough talk, we'll speak another time, you have a Deer to Hunt down, it would be best if you continue the Hunt."

And so, Iris nodded her slowly and they continued following the track and the trail of blood that was before them. The trail was long and it grew longer as they continued following it. Ragnar began to see in Iris's eyes fear, for this was the first time she had ever hunted something. For truly, it would be foolish for a Hunter to give up tracking down its prey. Ragnar does not regret the many reasons why he chose to live the life that he was in.

It would cost him dearly to run away and give up then to push forward and accept the consequences that he made to himself. And so, Ragnar and Iris walked on, they pushed ever onward until they find themselves looking at a part of the bridge. "That deer," Iris said. "It blocked our way."

The Deer ran from them, it found itself on a bridge, it broke a few pieces of the bridge, the whole bridge didn't fall down, and the Deer continued forward. "I'll Jump across and then you'll jump across too and I'll catch you." Ragnar said.

And then, Ragnar took a few steps back, and ran towards the gap of the bridge, then jumped across the gap and landed on the next part of the bridge. And then, Iris took a few steps back, and ran towards the gap of the bridge, then jumped across the gap but then she didn't land on the next part of the bridge. So, Ragnar reaches out his hand and she grabbed Iris's hand and he held onto it. "Iris!" Ragnar Shouted, "Don't worry, I got you!"

Then Iris pulled herself up and she puts her other hand on the edge of the bridge as she was pulling herself up. "Come on," Ragnar said. "Pull yourself up!"

Then, Ragnar pulled her up to the bridge and then they both caught their breaths for a long moment before doing anything else. "Are you alright?" He asked.

"Yes, I'm alright." She answered.

"Good. Now come along. The hunt is still on and we still have an Animal that we must not lose track of."

"Yes, right."

Then, Iris walked in front of him and they continued on and followed the Deer's track that still laid before them. And then a minute later, a whole group of Demons came before them and they pulled out their Swords and Axes and they were ready for a

fight. "Demons," Ragnar said. "Iris, get behind me. Stay back!"

And so, Iris went behind him and she stayed there and then Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he was also ready for a Battle. The Demons began to charge quickly towards him as he stood there and he kept his distance. And then, Ragnar begins to charge quickly towards them and he swings his Greatsword and he begins to kill those Demons. He swings his Greatsword and he cuts off their heads, he cleaves them open and he slices them in half as they continued to draw nearer towards him. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on.

And so, Ragnar kills the rest of those Demons that were standing before him as he was protecting Iris behind him. As he protected her, more Demons began to die before him and nothing ever held him back as his Sword cuts more of them down. He continued on and he fought to the death against every last one of them brutally and Violently. And so, all of those Demons were now Dead and Ragnar and Iris pushes ever onward.

Ragnar and Iris walked on, searching for the Deer by following its track that still laid heavily before them on this Road. As they followed its track, Ragnar and Iris found themselves before a large Temple that was around this forest. And they go inside the Temple and they walk and they see many sculptures of Gods and Kings. "I've never seen anything quite like that," Iris said. "It must've taken them years to build this."

But Ragnar didn't say anything but looked and sees the many things that this Temple contained and they were large. Then, a moment later, Iris sees the Deer's tracks again. "Hey Ragnar," She said. "Look... the Deer has been here."

And then, once again, they followed the Deer's large tracks that continued ever on to be very long before them. Its trail led to the outside of the Temple and Ragnar and Iris followed it and they found themselves outside again. They continued to follow the track for yet another mile that laid heavily before them as they search for this Deer. As they walked, they could hear the quiet forest and the sound of the air. They could feel the cold atmosphere revolving heavily around them as they were hunting in the evening.

At times like these, it's very rare for the people to have this kind of peace and it was especially rare for Ragnar or even Delphine to find peace. But all the people have fear in themselves from the Demons

disturbing the peace. And so, Ragnar and Iris walked on until they could feel the ground shake. And then, a giant Troll appears before them. The troll appeared and punched the ground, causing Ragnar and Iris to fall down.

Then, the Troll puts it's hands on Ragnar and it caused him not to move, then Iris pulls out her Sword and she ran before the Troll. And then, she slices the Troll's arm and as it's blood splattered, it began to roar in pain. Then, Iris went before Ragnar and she helped him up and then he looked at her. Then, Ragnar pulled out Iris's now and he handed it to her. "Iris, Show me that you're ready!"

Then, the Troll roared loudly before them and the ground began to shake violently as they try and remain balanced. They covered their ears for the Road was too powerful for an of them to withstand. "Are we actually going to fight that thing?!" Iris Shouted.

"We have no other choice!" Ragnar Shouted.

Then, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he was ready to fight this Troll before him as the Troll also pulled out his Battle Axe And was also ready for a fight. The Troll charges after Ragnar and he uses his Battle Axe and he tries to attack Ragnar, and he blocks all of his attacks. Then, Ragnar uses his Greatsword and he attacks The Troll and he began to be backing up from his Sword. Ragnar's Greatsword and the Troll's



Battle Axe began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Again, the Troll charges after Ragnar and he swings his Battle Axe and he tries to attack Ragnar and he blocks all of his attacks.

Then again, Ragnar uses his Greatsword and he attacks attacks the Troll and he began to be backing up from his Sword. And again, Ragnar's Greatsword and the Troll's Battle Axe began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. And as, Ragnar and the Troll battles each other, Iris uses her Bow and Arrow and she aims and she shoots at the Troll's chest. She lands many Arrows onto the Troll's chest and Arms and then, the Troll began to lose balance of itself. And as it lost balance, Ragnar continues to swing his Greatsword against it and then the Troll fell down to the ground and now it's Blood and Gore began to leave him and stain the ground.

Then, Ragnar grabs the Troll by it's neck and he began to choke it as Iris was standing before him and watching him. "Now Iris!" He Shouted, "Show me that you're ready!"

Then, Iris pulls out an Arrow and puts it onto the string and pulls it, she aims but the Troll tries to escape from Ragnar's grasp and then he punches the ground. The ground shakes and Iris loses balance. As she lost balance, she released the Arrow but instead of

it landing onto the Troll, it landed onto Ragnar's shoulder. Ragnar felt weary for a second for the Arrow inflicted into him was deep. "The cycle ends here," Ragnar said. "Know that I have sent you down to your death!"

Ragnar then uses his Greatsword and he stabs the Troll's head and then he removes his Sword from the Troll's head and then the Troll died. Ragnar then pulls the Arrow out of his arm leaving him with a scar. Then Iris walked before him and she saw the wound that she gave to him. "I... I'm so sorry." She said.

Ragnar held out his hand at Iris and he slowly gets himself up and he slowly walks away from her and he says to her, "...Your Deer is getting away."

"Yes, of course." Iris said.

Then, Iris went ahead of him and they continued to follow the deer, they followed the Deer's trail for a good while. Once again, they found themselves in the forest hunting for this Deer, as they followed it, they once again could hear the sounds of the air moving around them. Once again, the forest was quiet for it was rare to find animals in times like this. "I can't believe we had to fight something like that," Iris said. "It was unlike anything I've ever seen."

"We had to," Ragnar said. "There was no other choice. A true Hunter would never run away from it's

prey. If he did, all would know that he is weak. He would be Hunter laid bare, powerless, fearful, afraid."

Iris could not understand the Words that Ragnar said to her, for this was his way in life, to not run away from his enemies. He did not choose this life by force, he chose this life because for him there was no other way. He has chosen the life of a Ranger so could find for himself a purpose in this life and not so he could sit around and feel sorry for himself. He hunted, fought, and killed for many years to simply right all of his wrongs from his Youth-hood. And now he trains Iris to be a skillful Hunter, so she can survive these Lands if she wishes to follow him.

## **CHAPTER 4: A HUNTSMAN'S PAIN**

The Ranger took Iris and they both began to walk the Road together as the fate of the World hangs in the balance. Delphine appears and tells the Ranger that he must train her and be fit to Hunt if she wishes to survive in this Earth. And so, the Ranger goes his

way and he trains her to Hunt or be hunted for survival is the key to everything in this life. Survival is a type of thing of which they must do if they wish to continue onward on their journey to defeat the Daedric Lords. The role of The Huntsman is to live and survive in the Wilds and Hunt the Deer that roams around here.

You put quite a risk on taking this Girl with you, Ragnar for her survival is in your hands and you're responsible for whatever happens to her. Do you so simply desire the Daedric Lords to Hunt them down and kill them before they could do anymore damage? If so, then you must warn that Girl that the path ahead is difficult, Far difficult than it will ever be. You're not meant to die here, Ragnar, you still have a destiny to fulfill for yourself. This Destiny of yours will either be your greatest achievement or perhaps even your greatest mistake. Farewell, for now.

## I

And so, Ragnar and Iris Continued On and they followed the Deer's track for a very long while for it was a long track. A while later, Iris found the Deer licking it's wound on it's arm. So, Iris hid behind a large stone and pulled out her Bow and an Arrow and she readied it. Ragnar then went next to Iris and spoke

with her, saying, "Remember what I said to you. When you aim, make sure it hits where you want it to hit.

"If you shoot like a mortal, then you will miss like a mortal. You are the Hunter, the Deer is your prey. The only thing that this Deer shall receive is a quick Death. Do not hesitate!"

Iris had her Arrow readied onto the Bow and she begins to slowly pull it with the string and she aims at the Deer. She then releases the Arrow and it landed onto the Deer between it's Throat. "I got it!" Iris Shouted.

"Good." Ragnar said.

Iris then runs towards the Deer and she kneels down and she stares at it for a very long while as the Deer laid dying. Then, Ragnar walks towards Iris and he kneels down next to her. And as he kneeled down, he said to her, "Now... finish what you started."

Then, Iris pulls out her Sword and she points it at the Deer to stab it and put it out of it's misery before going anywhere else. She looked at the Deer and the deer's eyes were innocent that she couldn't do it. "I... I can't." She said.

And so, Ragnar helped her do it, he held the Sword with two hands with Iris; and together, they both slowly pierced the Deer's side. Then the Deer died and Iris's Hunt was over. Iris looked at him and she asked him, "So, what happens now?"

"Now... your life as a Hunter begins." He said.

And so, they looked at the many lands of the Earth through a cliff that they were standing upon where the Deer is. And they stared through the cliff for a few seconds at what else lied ahead for them. Then, Ragnar was going to put his arm and wrap it around Iris but he could not. So he takes the Sword out of the Deer's side. He then gives the Sword back to Iris and then Ragnar gets himself up.

Then, Ragnar picks up the Deer with two hands and Iris gets herself up and she continued to stare on into the World. Then, she goes before Ragnar and she asks, "Where are we going?"

"You have hunted this Deer," He said. "And you've succeeded, and now we eat."

And they went walking again and they find a perfect place to gather logs and make fire before them as the Night goes on. They gather logs and made fire and Ragnar cooked the Deer as Iris sat down and watched. As he cooked the Deer, Ragnar cuts it into many pieces and hands one of them to Iris. "Eat up," He said. "It will satisfy your hunger for a good while."

And so, Iris took a piece of the Deer and she begins to eat that piece of the Deer as it was now cooked. As she ate it, she began to feel herself changing and evolving. "Iris, what troubles you?"

Ragnar asked, "You have hunted your prey and you've succeeded. Why do you feel sad?"

"I... have killed... I... I've never felt this pain inside of me," She said. "I feel as if something... important left me. I feel painful after doing such a deed as this."

Then, Ragnar wraps his left Arm around Iris's body and he began to hold her to warm her up from the Cold. Then, he spoke with her, saying, "I know... I have experienced this myself when I killed my first animal. That first kill is always the most... intense. Be beware Iris, the more animals you kill, your envy of the Hunt will only increase."

As he spoke this, he sees that Iris sheds a Tear from her eye as she stares at the fire that burned before them. Then, Ragnar offers her comfort and he speaks with her again, saying, "Do not cry, Iris. Those who weep for the Dead will not find hope in the end. Their faith dies and their soul fades away. Yes, there is nothing for you to fear anymore.

"Let go, Iris. Let go of all of your fears and all of your sorrows. Cast everything into the fire and watch as they all slowly burn away."

## II

Then, Iris wraps her arms around Ragnar and he lets her hold onto him and she looks down to herself

as she is doing this. Never once did anyone say such meaningful things to her as she was out in this World amongst Humans and Demons. And then, they eat the rest of the Deer and then a moment later, Ragnar speak with Iris, saying, "Get some sleep, Iris. We have a big day tomorrow and it's best if you get yourself some rest."

And so, they rested and they slept and Iris completed her Hunt and she proved that she was ready for this Journey. This Journey was indeed difficult for even Ragnar to handle, but he had no other choice, he couldn't just leave Iris behind. He has shown her his ways and how and why he became a Ranger and a Hunter that hunts the Demons. Tonight, they will rest for now, but indeed, what would lie ahead for them, they would never know. Iris sleeps with Ragnar and he holds onto her and he warms her up from the Cold wind that was revolving around them.

And then, the next morning came for them and the Sun began to rise up slowly as the Night fades away, slowly. And then, Ragnar opens his eyes and he begins to see the Morning Sky come forth before them all as the Night was no more. He sees that Iris was sleeping with him as he was also sleeping on the floor and his cape was used as a blanket for him and Iris. "Iris, get up!" He said to her.



He was patting her back as he was trying to make sure that she was actually awake and no longer being asleep. And so, she opens her eyes and she was awake from her sleep and she sees Ragnar already being awake from his slumber. And then, he began to lay back a bit and watch as the Morning Sun began to be seen by all as it was no longer Nighttime. "Have you slept well, Iris?" He asked her.

"Yes, I have." She answered.

"Good. Soon, we're going to be off again and on our way. We have to go someplace very important."

Then, a few moments later, he began to feel confused and his soul began to feel sorrowful and he had no clue what is going on. He looked up to the sky and he began to think to himself, saying, "What on Earth is going on? I feel troubled. I don't know what is happening to me or what thoughts are in my mind. Is this for real?"

Iris began to look at Ragnar and she Asked him, "What's wrong, Ragnar?"

Ragnar could not answer her for he did not know what to say or do for he was troubled and very confused about what was happening. "Ragnar?" She was now being worried about him and she began to see that he was indeed not in his current state. And then, Iris began to get even closer to Ragnar and all he

could see was her face closer to his as he was sitting down. "Is something wrong?" She asked him.

And she began to reach her hand slowly to touch his face to see if he was really alright or was there really a problem. Then, his cheeks began to be red as she was about to touch his face for he had never been in a real situation with a Woman before. "There's nothing wrong, Iris. I just feel something strange shifting in the wind." He said.

"I'm sorry, Ragnar," Iris said. "But I don't know what you're talking about?"

"This is not normal," he thinks to himself. "This is not normal!"

"But you know, Ragnar. If there is something that you want me to do then just let me know."

Then, he thought about it for a moment and it was not that he was sorrowful or very troubled, it was that he was a bit embarrassed in himself. He's never had any real conversation with a Woman before and now he was but, there was nothing further that he could say or do. "Why is this happening to me?" He thinks to himself. "It looks real, it feels real, then again dreams seem pretty real."

"So, Ragnar," Iris said. "Is there something that you need me to do?"

"I see," He said. "Well, you can come here for a moment."

"Alright." She said.

And so, she walks towards Ragnar and she kneels down before him and she stares at him for a long while and waits for Ragnar to do something. "Whoa, she smells good." Ragnar thought. Then she said to Iris, "Iris, may I touch you?"

"Oh, fine." She said.

And so, Ragnar takes her by her Arm and he touches her Arm and he holds onto it to think of something that's happening to him. "She has a pulse?" He wondered. "What is this? Why Have I not experienced all of this before?"

"Why do I feel like this, why am I doing this? But this is the last test, I have to confirm this no matter the cost!"

"Iris." He said to her. "Can... can I touch your chest?"

"What?" She asked.

She could not figure out what was going on with Ragnar and she could not figure out why he wants to touch her breast. *This is Necessary.* Ragnar thought. *That's right. Naturally. I have to ask her naturally!*

"You... don't mind that, right?" He asked her. *Good God, you're an Idiot!* He said to himself.

"Fine, but it's embarrassing that we're doing this." She said.

And so, she lets herself up and then she turns her face and she looks away from Ragnar as he stares at her chest. And then, Ragnar lifts up his right hand and then he slowly lets it go towards her breast and he starts to touch it.

### III

And so, Ragnar began to be fondling with Iris's breast and she begins to breathe in and breathe out as her own breast was being fondled by Ragnar. And then, Ragnar began to think to himself, *Let's see if I can assess the situation. The fact that I'm doing this right now must mean something. Why am I just figuring this out right now? Is it just that I'm totally new to this?*

*I just need some answers, maybe I'm exaggerating, yes that must be the problem. It has to be, it can't be anymore than I imagined it to be. I don't know what else to say or what else to put to it.*

Then, Ragnar stops thinking to himself and he quickly lets go of Iris's breast after touching and feeling it for a long while. *Oh God, he wondered. Just, How long do I plan on feeling her chest?!* "Iris. I apologize. I didn't mean to go that far." He said to her.

"Oh... it... it's... alright," She said. "Well, What Do you plan to do next to me, Ragnar? What shall I do

about my clothes? Should I remove them myself? Or are you gonna remove them?"

"Whoa, Wait a minute, Iris. This isn't right!" Ragnar Shouted. Then, he breathes in and breathes out and he says to her, "No, we don't have time to be doing such things."

Then, Iris backs up from Ragnar and she stands up and she starts to feel shocked and fearful by him after he said this. "I'm sorry." She said.

"It's fine, Iris. I forgive you, completely. More importantly, we must be going."

"Where are we gonna go?"

"We are headed North, and we are going towards the Mountains. We must get ready. We cannot stay in this place any longer."

And so, Ragnar gets up from the ground and then he gathers all of his belongings and so does Iris, and they began to continue where they left off. As Ragnar and Iris Continued their Journey, they could see mountains from a distance, the Mountains led to a place somewhere dark and sinister. Dark and drear it looked, though there were patches of sunlight on it's brown sides, and behind it's shoulders, the tips of snow-peaks gleamed. "Are those mountains?" Iris asked,

"Of course," Ragnar said. "That is only the beginning of the many mountains in these Lands, and

we have got to get through, or over, or under those, somehow, before we can come into Wilder-land beyond. And it is a deal of a way even from the other side of them to the mountain in the East."

And just at that moment, Iris felt more tired than she ever remembered feeling before, she was thinking about being some place where there would be no troubles and no danger for both her and Ragnar. And as they were traveling, they could once again see Delphine before them. And of course, she had something important to tell them and so did they. "Ah, Delphine," Ragnar said. "What brings you?"

"Bringing Peace back to the Lands? Having important things to do, as usual? Exploring the lands here and there?"

"I have actually," Delphine said. "But that's not why I'm here. The more important thing is why are you here?"

"Iris and I are going towards the mountains. I sense there is something lurking there and it must be taken care of." Ragnar answered.

"The mountains? No. You will never get there. Yes, there is something lurking there. But the Daedra that hide within the mountains will find you wherever you will be and kill you on sight if they could so easily see you."

"Daedra?" Iris asked. "What is a Daedra?"

Delphine looks at Iris and she speaks to her, saying, "Daedra are cruel, wicked and ugly-hearted creatures. They live in the deepest pits of Hell and they are known by many to be the strongest of all the Demons. Many people feared them and they could not stand a chance against them. It would be impossible for a mere human to fight against the Daedra for they carry the strongest weapons than any Sword. The Daedra are known for serving only Satan and their power is believed to have been given to them by Satan himself."

Then, Delphine looks at Ragnar and she stares at him for a long while before she could say anything else and then, she spoke with Ragnar, saying, "Ragnar, have you been teaching her your ways? Have you been training her?"

"Yes. I have." Ragnar said.

"That's all well and good," She said. "But you must all be cautious. You must Steel yourselves against the Daedra otherwise you'll become their favorite pets for all eternity."

"Wait. Where are you off to? There is work to be done."

"I believe that I have told you not too long ago that I am a Warrior that has been looking for someone like you for a very long time. Our purpose is to drive out the Demons from this world and all of those who

defy God. And we are here to give assistance to those whose hearts are strong and bursting with fire against their enemies. When I met you that day when you were at the City's Palace and we defeated the Daedra, I could feel a sudden shift in the wind. I knew from that day, that it was you that they have been seeking.

"You are a Ranger for a reason. You did not choose to be a Hunter by curiosity. I've said it Before and I'll say it again, you are strong enough, capable enough to take down these Demons that roam this Earth. And I will aid you in anyway I can. The only reason why we separated was because I fought Demons in that city which was far more powerful than the ones that you fought.

"But now, the Demons grow stronger with each Demon you kill.

## IV

"Whoever is behind these Demon attacks shall pay dearly. Each new Demon that you fight will be much more skilled, and will be much more harder to put down. Even the strongest Ranger in the world needs a helping hand. You can trust me. If you don't trust me, then I will simply take my leave while you head out to those mountains to likely not make it out of there, alive."



Ragnar stood there for a moment and he thought about it if he brought Delphine along with him on his Journey. "Very well then," he said. "Lend me your strength. Follow me."

"It is wise to recognize when you have only one choice. Let's not waste any time. Let's get going."

And from that point forward, Delphine followed Ragnar on his Journey to reach the Daedric Lords and fulfill his destiny. They wasted no more time and they ventured towards the mountains. There were many paths that led up to those mountains, many passes over them. But most of the paths were cheats and deceptions and led nowhere or to bad ends, and most of the passes were infested by evil things and dreadful Dangers. Ragnar and Iris, being helped by the knowledge and memory of Delphine, took the right road to the right pass.

Long days after they had climbed out of the valley and left the last homely house miles behind, they were still going up and up and up. The nights were comfortless and chill, and they did not dare to look away or to talk out loud, for the Echoes were uncanny, and the silence seemed to dislike being broken. Ragnar and Iris began to think equally gloomy thoughts, but Delphine said nothing and they continued to follow the mountain path. Many people have not passed this way for a very long time, but

Delphine had, and she knew how evil and danger had grown and thrived in the Wild, since the Demons have driven men from the lands, and the Daedra had spread in secret after many long and dreadful battles over the years. Even the good plans of Delphine go astray sometimes when one is off on dangerous over the edge of the Wild; and Delphine was a smart enough Warrior to know it.

Delphine knew that something unexpected might happen, and she hardly dared to hope that they would pass without fearful adventure over those great tall mountains with lonely peaks and valleys where no King ruled. Suddenly, the Earth began to shake under them and there was a large fog that was surrounding them as they stood. Delphine was now nowhere near to be seen for the fog and the air that was around them was too great and powerful for them to handle. Out jumped the Daedra, and there were lots of Daedra that were before them as they stood there. There were about twelve of them and they all came and grabbed Ragnar and Iris and carried them through the crack.

But not Delphine, for she was the only one that was nowhere to be found in this huge cold atmosphere that they were in. The crack then closed with a snap, and Ragnar and Iris were on the wrong side of it. Ragnar and Iris still had no clue of where Delphine was and neither did the Daedra, but the Daedra didn't

want to find out. They seized Ragnar and Iris and hurried them along. The Mountain pathway was no filled with Daedra all over the place and lots of them began to crawl on the walls.

The Daedra chained their hands behind their backs and linked Ragnar and Iris in a line, and dragged them to the far end of the cavern with Iris tugging behind Ragnar in the Line. There in the shadows on a large flat stone sat a tremendous Daedra with a huge head, and armed Daedra were standing around him carrying the Axes and the bent swords that they used. Ragnar and Iris sees the Daedric Lord sitting on the Throne. The king stared at both of them and questioned them. "Who are these miserable persons?!" The Daedric Lord Shouted.

"I am Ragnar of Midland," Ragnar said. "I am a Ranger and this one is my follower, she's a Hunter. We were just crossing this road so we can head to the other side. On this other side, we are expecting a good friend of mine and he is waiting for us to come back with good news of our deed. And also, we wish to share a mug with him or two for the time being."

"He is a Liar, o truly tremendous one!" A Daedra Shouted. "Several of our people were struck by lightning in the cave, when we invited these people to come below and they are as deaf as stones. Also he has not explained this!"

The Daedra held out Ragnar's Greatsword and it shown with Demonic Blood stained on it. The Daedric Lord gave a truly awful howl of rage when he looked at it, and all of his Knights gnashes their teeth, clashed their shields, and stamped. "Murderers!" The Daedric Lord Shouted, "Filthy Assassins! Slash them!

"Beat them! Bite them! Gnash them! Take them away to dark holes full of snakes and never let them see the light again." The Daedric Lord was in such a rage that he jumped out of his Throne and began to rush at Ragnar with his mouth open.

"Ragnar, no!" Iris Shouted.

Before all Hope was lost in Iris's eyes, all the lights in the cavern went out, and the great fire went off into a tower of red glowing smoke, right up to the roof, that scattered piercing red sparks all among the Daedra. The yells and yammering, croaking, and jabbering; howls, growls and curses and shrieking that followed were beyond description. The Sparks were burning in the Goblins, and the smoke made the Daedra go blind.

## V

Suddenly, the spark began to fly in the cavern from one place to the next, and then it zoomed down and it pounded the ground like a bolt of lightning. The

pound was so powerful that it made quite a number of Daedra fly in the air and fell down to their Doom. Then out of the ashes, a dark figure came out from the shadows. It was Delphine. "Delphine! You're back!" Iris Shouted.

Then Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and she holds it up into the sky. The Daedric Lord knew of that Sword that she carried and he spoke out loud, saying, "I... I know that Sword! It is the Greatsword of the Ebony Warrior! The Demon-cleaver... NOOO!!"

Then, Delphine ran before the Daedric Lord and swings her Greatsword and she slices the Daedric Lord and he falls down but doesn't die. Then, Delphine looked at Ragnar and Iris and she stood there. She held her Greatsword that was now stained with Demonic Blood and spoke to them, saying, "Take up arms. Fight!"

Then all the Daedra pulls out their Swords and they were ready for a fight. "Fight!" She Shouted.

Then, Delphine went before five Daedra and she cleaves all of them open in one strike, then she went before Ragnar and Iris and she cuts off their bindings. Then Ragnar and Iris pull out their Swords and they were ready for Battle, then, they followed Delphine as she went her way slicing many Daedra open. Ragnar uses his Greatsword and he begins to kill every Daedra that he sees before him as he charges against them. He

cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open as more of them keep coming. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on.

As they continued killing many Daedra, Ragnar begins to see Delphine's eye color turning red as she kills more Daedra. He then realizes that she has a huge scar on her arm. Then, Delphine began to charge against the Daedra in a more brutal and violent way as more of them kept coming. She rips out their hearts, she squeezes off their heads, she punches them to death, and she rips their bodies in half. Ragnar, Iris and Delphine Continued onward in this Battle killing each and every single one of them in this cavern.

And so, they make it across a bridge and they moved on from there, and then The Daedric Lord sees them all running from them. "All of you, get behind me!" Delphine Shouted.

The Daedric Lord walks slowly towards her and then he pulls out his Greatsword and he points it directly towards her. Then, Delphine also points her Greatsword at the Daedric Lord and she spoke to them, "I bring death to those who worship Satan on his dark Throne! My Sword punishes all, without distinction!"

Then, Delphine and the Daedric Lord charges against each other and a Battle begins between them as they were on the bridge. The Daedric Lord charged after Delphine and he swings his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine, but she blocks all of his attacks. Then, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she attacks the Daedric Lord and he began to be backing up from her Greatsword. Delphine's Greatsword and the Daedric Lord's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Again, the Daedric charges after Delphine and he swings his Greatsword And he tries to attack Delphine, but she blocks all of his attacks.

Then again, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she attacks the Daedric Lord and he began to be backing up from her Greatsword. And again, Delphine's Greatsword and the Daedric Lord's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Yet again, the Daedric Lord charges after Delphine and he swings his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine, but she blocks all of his attacks. Then yet again, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she attacks the Daedric Lord and he began to be backing up from her Greatsword. And yet again, Delphine and the Daedric Lord's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning.

Once more, the Daedric Lord charges after Delphine and he swings his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine, but she blocks all of his attacks. Then once more, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she attacks the Daedric Lord and he began to be backing up from her Greatsword. And once more, Delphine and the Daedric Lord's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other and each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Then, with all of her anger and all of her fury, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she slashes the Daedric Lord across his chest and he falls down to the ground. "For your crime, you will die like Vermin!" The Daedric Lord Shouted, "I will hunt you down, at the End of the Earth I will find you!"

Then, Delphine swings out her Greatsword and she slices off the Daedric Lord's head and it flies down to the ground. And all of the Daedra stare as they see that the Daedric Lord is dead and they all began to charge quickly towards Ragnar, Iris and Delphine. As they all charge quickly towards them, Ragnar and Iris believed that there was no way that they would make it out alive. Then, Delphine holds onto both Ragnar and Iris and she charges out of their way and she goes with very fast speed. Delphine was a much quicker and a much faster Warrior than the Demons or the Daedra that were before her.



Then, the chase ended between the Daedra and Ragnar, Iris, and Delphine; they went towards the path that led to the northern end of the mountains and they decided to keep heading North.

## **CHAPTER 5: Prepared for Death**

Iris has completed her training and she began to be prepared for the more challenges that awaited her as she was with Ragnar. Ragnar begins to have sudden changes and feelings in himself after he made Iris his follower. They come across Delphine and she decides to follow Ragnar for the path ahead for him will be much harder than expected. They head up towards the mountains where they will meet the Daedra that were before them all. And with Swords they make it out alive from the mountain and they decide to keep heading North from where they were last time.

Delphine now follows you, Ragnar, for she is the Ebony Warrior and she has been fighting the Creatures of the Night for almost her entire life. Throughout the events of her life she had only one purpose only, to defeat the Grim Reaper and drive the

Demons away. But that was in an Age long past. Now, things change for her and now she does more than simply wanting to defeat The Grim Reaper, her greatest enemy. Beware, Ragnar for even dangerous things are ahead for you as you make even more progress to reach and defeat the Daedric Lords. Farewell, for now.

## I

After another hour of more walking, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine builded a fire to keep themselves warm from the cold atmosphere. Both Ragnar and Iris had lots of things to say to Delphine after seeing her brutal strength after fighting the Demons. "Hey Delphine." Iris said.

"Yes, what is it?" Delphine asked.

"That... ruler... their Lord. He mentioned your Sword. He thinks that you wield a Sword that's very sinister towards him. He called it... the "Demon-Cleaver."

"Your eyes, Delphine," Ragnar said. "Your eyes changed while you were fighting those Daedra. It was unlike anything that I've ever seen."

Delphine looks at both Ragnar and Iris and she stared at them for a long while after being told this to her. And she spoke with them, saying, "Yes. My Sword

has many names. But where I'm from, names for weapons are common. I named my Sword, the Crissagrim.

"I wield this Sword and many will name it after they've seen what your blade can do unlike all others. A Blade is a weapon, a tool. It can be forged and reforged. Indeed, I have forged this blade myself but a mysterious friend of mine forged my Armor. All I can do is watch and be ready for my time in this World will end at a time that I will not expect."

Ragnar and Iris stared at Delphine in a manner of confusion and shock, for truly a Warrior does not hide their secrets and reasons on why they must do what they must do. Then, Delphine stood up and then she stared at the Moon that was before them and she stares down at Ragnar and Iris. Then, she spoke to them, saying, "I am an instrument of Death against my enemies. I've been an Ebony Warrior for as long as I can remember. I live by the Sword and die by the Sword.

"The Grim Reaper came for me, he consumed my Human Spirit and made me just like him, he took my Soul and he said that I am already bound for Hell. I killed many who were deserving and many who were not. I lived on, to either save my people or avenge them. It was in an age long past, and I knew the day when the Earth would once again tremble and fear the

Darkness. I knew that the day would come when Satan sent the Black Elder Dragon to this Earth. I knew that the day would come, when I had to fight on once more against the creatures of the Night.

"The Seasons were confused and no longer was the Earth like it was used to be. That is why we are here. That is why you and I must save these people from these Demons. Our lives changed that day but we all had a purpose and a Destiny to fulfill ever since that dreadful day. I am still a Woman of good faith.

"I fought and I killed until the day that I Journeyed to the Highest Peak of all the Realms and fought the Grim Reaper. I wish for Heaven to be my paradise. But unfortunately, that won't be possible for I am Hell-bound until I destroy the Grim Reaper, forever. I will help defeat these Demons and sacrifice everything for humanity, once again, then I will have my long rest. And when I die, I will not enter the Gates of Heaven in fear."

Then, Delphine finishes speaking this speech that she shared with Ragnar and Iris and she sits down onto the ground. Ragnar and Iris were shocked by her words that she has spoken towards them. And then, Delphine finishes speaking with them, once more, saying, "Friends, we must not delay. Our work goes on. Soon we venture West from here, now get some rest."

And so, Ragnar and Iris went to sleep under the starry sky and Delphine went to sleep moments later after they went to sleep. And then, about six hours later, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine woke up feeling well rested. "Sleep well, Ragnar?" Delphine asked.

"Yes. I have." Ragnar said.

"Iris?"

"Absolutely." She said.

"Then it's decided. Now, we are off. Do not stray from my path. Follow me." Delphine said.

And so, Ragnar and Iris followed Delphine to where she was going in this foggy morning. Ragnar kept his eyes on Delphine, but Iris senses something behind her, they were Daedra.

"My God," Iris said. "It's them... it's them!"

Ragnar and Delphine looked at Iris, and then, Ragnar said to her, "What is it? Who is behind us?"

"It's those creatures, it's the Daedra!"

The Daedra charged after them in full speed, now remember, Daedra are faster than Demons both in strength and Skill.

## II

Now they were traveling from a large cliff that really fell deep into the oceans; but that doesn't stop Delphine from being ready for Battle. Delphine pulls

out her Greatsword and she was ready to fight the Daedra, then Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and Iris pulls out her Bow and an Arrow. "More Daedra?" Delphine asked. "Well nothing I can't handle. Alright then, to battle! Everyone with me!"

And then, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine charged forward into battle against the Daedra that were charging against them as well. Delphine then, uses her Greatsword and she begins to kill every last Daedra that she sees before her. She cuts off their heads, she slices them in half and she cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. Delphine Continued her way against the Daedra and she kills as many as she can with her Demonic powers and her Large Sword.

Ragnar also uses his Greatsword and then he begins to kill every last Daedra that he ever sees before him. He also cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners. Ragnar was a Ranger and a skillful Hunter and he has always lived on to kill the Demons that plagued this Earth. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. Ragnar also continued his way against the Daedra and he kills as

many as he can with his large Sword and his skillful strength.

Then Iris charges forward and she uses her Bow and Arrow and she aims and she shoots every last Daedra that she ever sees before her. She aims and shoots their Heads, she shoots them in their chest, and she lands a bunch of Arrows in their eyes. Iris became a skillful Archer and a Hunter and she became very fast with her Bow and she continues to land many more Arrows onto the Daedra. Once more, lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Iris continues her way against the Daedra and she kills as many as she can with her use of her Bow and her many Arrows.

Suddenly, Iris comes across a large Daedra that happened to be second in command with the Daedric Lord that Delphine just killed. He walks quickly towards her and he stood before her in all of his glory. And he began to speak with her, saying, "You must be the second woman of a company of three Hunters. I can't believe it. I don't like it at all!

"A woman playing at being a Hunter? Women are inferior to those in strength, what use could they be in a battle? You might have a use as a Nighttime plaything for that filthy man that you follow."

"What was that?" Iris asked.

"Perhaps you even achieved your rank as Hunter by sneaking in and wishing to sleep in his bed."

"HOW DARE YOU!!" She Shouted.

Then, the Daedric General charges towards Iris and he pulls out his Sword and he tries to attack her and she blocks all of his attacks. Iris also swings her Sword and she attacks the Daedric Lord and then he began to be backing up from her Sword. Iris and the Daedric General's Sword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. But as they dueled each other, Iris lost balance and she fell down to the ground. And then the Goblin General uses his Sword and he tries to attack Iris but she managed to dodge it and move away.

The Daedric General might be a pretty fast attacker, but Iris was a much faster dodger than he was when it comes to battle. *This Goblin is Strong!* Iris thought.

"The Battlefield is a sacred ground of men!" He shouted. "I Hadvar, Shield-Thane to the Daedric Lord, Azura, shall teach you the folly of your frivolity in setting foot upon this very place!"

Then Hadvar pulls out his Crossbow and he aims and shoots Iris on her stomach and then Iris fell to the ground. She then pulls out the Arrow that was inflicted onto her and she began to feel great pain while



battling this Daedra. *I... I can't*, Iris thinks to herself. *I got... I have no strength!*

Then, Iris backed up from him but then she was behind a large cliff, and she could no longer back up for the fall would be too great. "What's wrong?"

Hadvar asked, "Nowhere left to run? Go on. Go on!"

"You adorn yourself like a man... but you're quite the gem aren't you? I'll offer you a change. If you come to me as a prisoner, you can leave this place alive. But what I mean as a prisoner, is you'd be my Army's harlot!"

"Go to Hell, you foul beast!" Iris Shouted.

"Then DIE!!" Hadvar Shouted.

Then Hadvar raises his large Sword and was about to kill Iris, and then Ragnar comes in front of him and then he blocks his attack. "Ragnar!" Iris Shouted.

Then, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and slices the Daedric General down to the ground, then he approaches him and speaks with him, saying, "Come on! I feel like swinging my Sword with all my might, until I can think about anything else!"

Hadvar then gets himself back up and he speak with Ragnar, saying, "Now man! You stopped my attack well! But lightning doesn't strike twice! Can you stop this? Prepare yourself for my mighty blow! Take this!!"

Then, Ragnar swings his Sword and he blocks the attack that was about to be used on him by Hadvar.

### III

Then, he stabs the Daedric General in his left eye. Hadvar falls but he doesn't die but he doesn't move either. Then, Ragnar walks towards Iris and he speaks with her, saying, "What's wrong? This isn't how you usually are. You look... ill. Are you sure you're not feeling sick?"

Iris could not respond to Ragnar and then she removed towards the edge of the cliff and then she was about to go backwards and fall down. "H-Hey... Iris!" He Shouted.

Ragnar grabs Iris's arm and then he pulls her up, and then the Daedric General pulls out his Crossbow and aims at Ragnar. Hadvar then shoots at Ragnar and it lands onto his stomach, and then Ragnar begins to feel dizzy and then he fell down the edge of the cliff with Iris. Delphine then sees that Ragnar and Iris fell off the cliff and fell down. "IRIS!! RAGNAR!!!" Delphine Shouted.

Ragnar and Iris then fell down towards the river and the river breaks the fall. Then, Delphine still fought on against the Daedra; and the Battle went on for a while and Delphine charged through the Daedra's

weakest point and she escaped from their presence. Meanwhile, down in the river, Ragnar sees land and he swims towards it. Ragnar then pulls Iris as he swims towards the land. Ragnar then coughs out a whole bunch of water, he then speaks to himself, saying, "DAMMIT! Never again will I ever do that! I'm not swimming around with my Armor on!"

Then, Ragnar sees if Iris is still breathing by feeling her chest and resting his head onto her chest to see if she's still breathing. "Oh God! Not now, not here!" Ragnar Shouted. He realizes that Iris isn't breathing at all.

Then Ragnar takes off her Armor and then he gives her CPR. Then Iris coughs out some water, and then Ragnar pushes down on Iris's stomach. Then Iris coughs out even more water, suddenly, Ragnar feels the Arrow on his stomach. He then pulls out the Arrow inflicted onto his Stomach and throws it into the River. He then speaks to himself, "That Bastard! All you Demons and Daedra, I will feed all of your souls to the vilest filth in Hell!"

"Still, we are lucky to be alive, falling from up there. Hard to believe. What now? There's no way we can scale that cliff. How do we get back? It's so cold?"

Then Ragnar lets out his hand and he feels Iris's head to see if she was doing alright. He was then speaking to himself again, saying, "High fever! It must

be why she fainted. This is bad, if she stays in the rain like this then she'll truly die here. Delphine will blame anything on me."

Ragnar then sees a cave that was very far away from where he was standing and it was a pretty small cave from the looks of it. Ragnar then picks Iris up from the ground and then he carries her from there to the cave that he saw before him. While inside of the cave, Ragnar lays Iris down onto the ground and he sits down beside her. Then, Ragnar takes off his Armor, he lays down his Weapons besides Iris's Weapons and then he lays down his Armor besides her Armor. Then, he takes off his Shirt and then he takes a bandage and he covers up his wound and he decided to sit with Iris to decide what to do with her.

As Iris laid there, Ragnar began to speak to himself, saying, "Now what do I do? There is a Storm out there, and Delphine is still up there and probably worried about us. And there is no way I can just carry her all the way up there. If I build a fire, it will draw them all to our location."

And then, Ragnar looks outside for a bit and then he stares down at Iris, he looks outside again and he stares at her again. "Ah, I can't help it! There has to be another way!" He said.

Then, Ragnar scratches his head and his hair for a while just to decide what to do and he finally gives in

and couldn't think any longer. "What a pain! Oh well, I can't let her stay in these. They're soaked." He said to himself.

Then, Ragnar goes over to Iris and he pulls her up to him and he starts taking off her clothes as she was not noticing. "What on Earth is she thinking?" He asked, "Going out to Battle with a fever? It just doesn't make any sense."

And then, Ragnar lays her clothes aside and he lays it next to his shirt as he tries to think of what else to do. Then he notices that there is Blood on his hands and he did not know where it came from and then he looks at Iris. "Blood," He said. "She's... she's Wounded!"

Then, Ragnar looks for the wound that he assumed was onto Iris and he looks onto her bare body to see where the blood came from. And he looks at her stomach and he sees that there was blood on it and it was the Arrow but it was no longer onto her after they fell. He then speaks to himself, saying, "Oh... I get it now. I guess it must be rough... being a Woman."

Then, Ragnar takes another bandage that was with him and he puts it onto Iris's wound on her stomach. Then, Iris feels the bandage on her wound and then she cries out in pain as Ragnar was trying to wipe out the blood. Then, Ragnar calms her down and he feels her head and she sees that she was sweating

as he was getting rid of her wound. And then, Ragnar continues to get rid of Iris's wound and it takes him quite some time.

## IV

Then, Ragnar picks Iris up from the ground and he lays her next to him as he was sitting down with her in this cave. Then, he puts his arm around her and his hand touches her shoulder, he puts her head onto his chest to calm her down. Then, he was warming her up from the Cold wind that blew outside of the cave and the storm was still going on outside. He was rubbing her shoulder and her back as they rested in that cave and waited for the storm to clear out from there. The Storm would continue to go onward in the day and it would last for a long while.

As they waited for the storm to clear out, Iris began to have a Dream of herself and she saw Aela, her sister, giving her a piece of advice. She spoke to her, saying, "Iris, the day is soon coming when you must stand up for yourself and fight back against your enemies. Dark times are ahead for the both of us and there are Demons out there roaming around these many lands. In life there is no peace nor happiness, you either fight to the death or you run away from your enemies like a coward. Only a fool accepts death

and only the courageous fight on against their enemies and not stand defenseless. One day, you will have to learn how to live on your own and stand up for yourself and fight against the Creatures of the Night."

This very saying triggers Iris for the rest of her days for this was now already happening to her as she follows Ragnar. The Vision leaves her and she opens her eyes and she sees that Ragnar was holding her and warming her up. "Hey." Ragnar said.

Then Iris looks up to the sky and she sees Ragnar being next to her as the Storm was clearing away and she speaks with him, saying, "Where are we?"

"A cave by the river. Luckily, falling into the River saved us." He said.

"River?" She asked.

"So, you don't remember a thing? After I had it with that Daedra, you lost your footing and fell off the cliff. You're pretty easygoing, considering that we almost drowned."

Then, Iris lets herself up a bit and Ragnar was still holding onto her and then he speaks with her again, saying, "What're you doing? Lie back down for now. The fever isn't done dropping yet."

Then as Iris lets herself all the way up, she realizes that she has no clothes on, then Ragnar speaks with her again, saying, "It was the only choice that I

had. You were soaking wet and you were freezing to death to boot."

Then Iris looks down at her body for a short second and she turns her Head towards Ragnar and she stares at him in shock. "What's with that look?" He asked.

Then, Iris pushes Ragnar away from her and she covers her Breasts from him and she turns her front body away from him. "What is wrong with you? I just saved your life." He said.

"Why am I not wearing any clothes? Did you take them off of me?!" She asked.

"I hate to tell you this but I'm the one who almost died dragging you out with Armor on!" He answered, "You wouldn't be alive right now if it weren't for me, you got that? Be glad that you're not one of them and be grateful that you're on my side."

Then, Iris turns her eyes and she looks at Ragnar for a few seconds and she remembers the words that Hadvar, the Daedric General said to her. The thoughts began to cloud her mind as it all came back to her as she was sitting her with Ragnar. "Now it's not the time to get mad all of a sudden and it will never be your time to think about such things that has happened to you or to me." Ragnar said.



And so, as he said this, Iris began to shake a little and she began to shed a Tear or two after hearing him say this. "What's the matter?" He asked.

"That... isn't my fault," she said. "Why would I think that? Tell me why I would think such an awful thing!"

Then, Ragnar walks slowly towards Iris and he puts both of his arms around Iris and she gasps and she felt embarrassed. "Hey... I'm sorry." He whispers.

And then, Iris struggles for a bit and she tries to escape from Ragnar as he was holding her but she couldn't and she stood up and Ragnar stood up with her. "Ragnar, let me go." She whispers.

But, Ragnar could not let her go, for he had more things to say to her before doing anything else for himself. "None of this is your fault," He said. "There is nobody here to blame, Iris. Nobody."

"Then, Why did you bring me along with you? Was it in vain or did you bring all of this to yourself?"

"We are not doing this in vain. I brought you along with me so you can survive, we are Hunters, Iris. And that makes us a target, from now until the End of Days, we are marked. So I brought you along, yes. But so you can have another chance, I told you before, let go of your fears and let go of your sorrows. Just let them burn away!"

"I can't, I just don't know how. I don't think... I can make it the rest of the way."

"You can... And you will."

Then, as he said this, Iris began to stare at him for a long while and she could not know what else to say to him. Then, Ragnar grabs his cape and he wraps it around Iris so she could wear it until her clothes were fully dry and until the Storm clears out.

## V

Then, Ragnar and Iris Continued to sit down together until the Storm clears out and Ragnar speaks with Iris, saying, "Tell me. Did your sister ever teach you to hunt?"

"Yes," She said. "She taught me what she knew."

"What was it that you wished to do before I took you along with me? What do you desire to do once we finish this heavy burden together?"

"Well, it's quite complicated, but I'll tell you as much as I can. Aela was always my sister and she took care of me along with my father and we were trying to figure out a way to survive out there. Until that day... the day that you showed up. You came and done what nobody else would ever wish to do. You fought to the Death against them, you and my father and also my sister too.

"There were so many Demons to count and I wanted to know about the World outside. I wanted to see the many fields and the many corners of this big World. I want someone... I... I need someone... to show me my place in all of this. That is why I wanted to follow someone like you. Someone who would bring peace to the many Kingdoms and cities of this world.

"Someone who would always be there for me. That is why I am here now. Why I was trained to become a Hunter by sister and by you as well. But then you came on that dark and dreadful day, you came and changed my life, forever. You came and saved not only me, but my sole purpose on what I am destined to do once I am out there in this Earth. Now I'm your follower, your Hunter."

"I understand... so that is your dream. You wanted someone to be there for you, and so I shall."

Then, Ragnar moves closer towards Iris where she was sitting down and he thought about it for a moment and he spoke with her again, saying, "Iris, we do not fight because the World makes us fight, we fight for a greater purpose. We fight so that all of the fighting that we've done were not in vain. We fight because there is no other way. We fight because we must. No matter the Darkness, we will always stand and rise up and not give in to Evil.

"If we give into Evil, then all hope is gone, the World will fade away like ash and crumble like dust. Iris we shall not give in to death, and we will never surrender."

And so, they've waited for another good twenty minutes until the Storm began to fully clear away and so it did. And then Iris spoke with Ragnar as she moves much closer to him, saying, "Ragnar, Do You Think that my clothes have dried up yet?"

"Yes," He said. "They should be dry by now."

"Oh, Alright." She said.

Then, Iris slowly gets herself up from the ground and then she walks towards her clothes to pick them up for herself. She removes Ragnar's cape and she throws it at him and he looks away from her and he doesn't watch as she puts her clothes back on. And then, she puts on her Armor starting with her boots, and then her Gauntlets, and finally her Armor which took some time to get on. And then, Ragnar grabs his shirt and he puts it on and then he also puts on his Armor starting with his Boots, and then his Gauntlets, and finally his Armor which also took some time to get on. And so, Ragnar and Iris were now ready to go out into the World again to look for Delphine and fight off the Demons.

Then, Ragnar pulls out a Steel Dagger and he walks towards Iris and he stands before her during this time. "Iris," He said. "Here."

And as Iris was touching the handle of the Dagger, Ragnar kneels down before her to say another thing that was very important to him. He touches her hand and he holds onto her and he speaks to her, saying, "On the day that I set forth on my Journey, I made two Daggers. One for myself and when the day came, one for my follower. Today is that day."

And then, Ragnar gives her the Dagger and she holds onto it and she looks at it for a long while and she looks at Ragnar and asks him, "So I'm just like you? A Hunter?"

"Indeed," He said. "But we are not ordinary Hunters. We are more than that. And the responsibility is far greater. And you must be better than me. Understand? Say it."

"I will be better."

"The power of this Weapon, any weapon, comes from your heart. But only when tempered by your head. By the Discipline, the self-control of the one who wields this Weapon. That is where the true strength of a Warrior lies. You must never forget that."

Then, Iris nods her head in agreement letting Ragnar know that she agrees with him on everything that he said. "I will never forget this." She said.

"Good then, come. Let's leave this place." He said.

And then, Ragnar picks up his Weapons and he puts them all onto his back and Iris did the exact same as he did. Then, Ragnar picks up his cape and he wraps it around his back and he begins to walk slowly out of that cave. Iris also begins to follow Ragnar wherever he goes and she would never leave his side ever again especially in difficult situations. Iris was now more than just a Hunter, she is an Adventurer, a Ranger and a skilled Archer as she roamed this Earth. Together, Ragnar and Iris Continued to walk forward onto the long Road that was lying before them as the Sun began to set down and then Night came for them.

## **CHAPTER 6: Survive The Night**

Ragnar, Iris and Delphine escape the hands of the Daedra who were chasing after them and desired bloody vengeance against them. Delphine explains to the both of them that she is a Warrior who lives by the Sword and dies by the Sword. They get chased again

by the Daedra afterwards as the vengeance continued on in the Day as it rained heavily on them. Iris gets wounded and Ragnar offers her aid and comfort as they hide from the Storm that raged on for quite some time. As they head out again, Ragnar gives Iris a Steel Dagger for her to always keep and never let it go.

This Dark Fantasy Epic of which you have been reading will soon reach it's Climax and it's resolution for the things to come. I have watched these people get stronger each day as a new Demon dies and another rises from it's place. This blood-soaked Journey that Ragnar has will only continue onward and it will probably never end. Perhaps he is also cursed to live like Delphine until every last one of these Demons has been defeated by the Sword. But that day has not come, now realize the Stars they die, Darkness has fallen in paradise, but they will be strong and they will fight against the creatures of the Night. Farewell, for now.

## I

The Sky became dark and the Moon was our and they kept walking on this long and Dark Road that went Ever on and on. As they continued walking, Iris felt weak and she could not keep up with Ragnar. The wound that was inflicted on Iris prevented her from

going any faster or as fast as Ragnar was going. It wasn't a heavy wound but it was one that would leave one in a state of heavy dizziness and all they could feel were their own wound. And so, Ragnar and Iris kept walking, they kept going on the Long Road that was before them as it led onward.

The Road wasn't an endless Road, but it was indeed a Road that went on for a very long time and seemed to never end. Then, Iris falls to the ground and breathes in and breathes out for she could not go on because of the state that she was in. Then, Ragnar walks towards Iris and he spoke with her, saying, "What's wrong? Can you walk?"

"I... I'm fine. It... it's nothing." She answered.

Then, Ragnar holds out his hand towards Iris to pull her up as she was struggling to move any further than before. "Here, I got you." He said.

Then, Iris grabbed his hand and Ragnar pulled her up, and she felt the wound that was inflicted upon her as she was getting up. Then, she puts her Arm on Ragnar's shoulder and she rests her head on his shoulder as she was trying to figure out what else to say. "It... it hurts." She said.

"Try not to mess with it," Ragnar said. "You've been shot with a Demonic Arrow. Their arrows are tainted and they burn your body for a good while. It doesn't kill you, but it leaves you feeling all dozed up.



Had they already killed you, we wouldn't be having this conversation.

"But it doesn't matter to the Daedra or the Demons whether you're a Woman or not. We are Rangers and Hunters and we must always fight back against those who have done greater damage to us. No matter what happens, we will not leave a battlefield until every last one of our enemies are dead. You understand that, don't you?"

Then Iris catches and slows down her breath for the wound was small but it was draining her from her strength. Then, she looked at Ragnar and she spoke with him, saying, "... Let's get going."

And so, they went on; Ragnar and Iris walked on this long and Dark Road to wherever it lead and wherever it will leave them. Once again, the air was clear and the Moon was full, Ragnar and Iris walked on for there was no other way to go or wherever to look next. Ragnar and Iris could not hear anything, other than Owls hooting in the background, and they also heard the Crows making noises as they flew in the Woods. They ignore the many sounds that the Animals make during this time and they kept moving forward and not looking back. The forest was always a peaceful place for the animals, unlike the other roads on the many fields and mountains where unexpected could easily be grabbed and eaten by that animal.

The forest and grass never stood a chance against Ragnar and Iris, they did not look back to their past mistakes and they kept walking on this Long Road. Then a moment later, Ragnar stopped walking when he heard something strange yet violent walking towards them. "We've stopped. What is it?" Iris asked.

"Stay behind me." Ragnar answered.

Iris did not know what he was talking about, but then, she also began to hear something walking towards them. Then, there were sounds of footsteps on the Road, and there were also sounds of shrieking coming Before them. It was the Daedra led by Hadvar, the Daedric General and Shield Thane to The Daedric Lord Azura. The Daedra stared down at Ragnar and Iris as they were ready to kill them, they made shrieking sounds and gnashes their teeth. "There is an Army of them," Iris said. "Where did they all come from?"

"We have found you!" Hadvar Shouted.

Hadvar steps down and he walks slowly towards Ragnar and Iris as they both stood there and stare at him. "So, you're alive!" He Shouted, "You indeed put a smile on my face!"

"You're looking lively yourself!" Ragnar said.

"Such impudence!" Hadvar Shouted, "Luck or not, I'm through being given a hard time by a lowlife lout like you!" He moves much closer towards them.

## II

"As a proud warrior and Thane of the Daedric Lord, Azura, it annoys me to no end. I won't just kill you, either. Once you're my prisoner, I'll personally administer the Torture technique that has passed down through my family for two hundreds year! You'll get your fill of Hell on Earth with a most painful, gruesome death!"

"You sure hold a grudge," Ragnar said. "Well, same to you."

"If you surrender quietly, very well! If you defy me, I shall chop off an Arm or two! Just so long as you can survive! As for the woman, she'll be a Toy for my Men here."

Then, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he points it at Hadvar as the Daedra behind him laughs and shriek. "You and your filthy beasts will not claim her today," Ragnar said. "You never will! She is mine and she will never be yours. It will indeed be the last mistake you will ever make!"

"You dare provoke me?" Hadvar asked, "Take them!"

Then, all of the Daedra pull out their Swords and their Axes and they pointed them at Ragnar and Iris and they began to charge quickly towards them. And

then, Iris pulls out her Bow and many Arrows and they began to charge towards the Daedra. Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he begins to kill every last Daedra that he sees before him brutally and Violently. He slices them in half, he cleaves them open and he cuts off their heads as more of them kept coming towards him. And so, Ragnar continues to fight off the Daedra that were before him and he did not look back.

Then, Iris uses her Bow and Arrow and she aims and shoots at every last Daedra that she sees before her on this night. She lands many Arrows onto their heads, their chest and even their eyes as more of them kept coming towards her. She did not miss a single shot as she was firing those Daedra and she did not give up as she was still killing them. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Iris continues to fight off the Daedra that were before her and she did not look back.

Then, Iris backs up behind Ragnar as she was fighting the Daedra and Ragnar looks at her with a very concerned look. "I can still fight!" She said, "You don't have to worry about me."

"Fair enough." Ragnar said.

"Do not falter!" Hadvar said, "There are two of them! All of you attack them at one charge!"

Then, more Daedra began to charge quickly towards Ragnar and Iris and they were prepared for whatever challenge lied before them. Ragnar holds onto his Greatsword and he charges quickly towards all of those Daedra that were before him. Iris holds onto her Bow and she pulls out many more Arrows and she also charges quickly towards all of those Daedra. Ragnar swings his Greatsword and again, he began to kill every Daedra that he sees before him. He cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open as more and more Daedra began to charge quickly towards him.

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. Ragnar was a powerful Hunter and a powerful Ranger that would always fight to the Death against those who would stand against him. And so, Ragnar Continued forward against the Daedra and he charges quickly towards all of them. Iris uses her Bow and Arrow again, and she aims and shoots at all of those Daedra that were charging towards her. The Arrows landed on their heads, their throats, their chests and even their eyes as more of them kept coming towards her.

She did not miss a single shot as more and more Daedra kept coming towards her in this Dark Night Before them. Again, Lots of Blood began to splatter all

over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Iris Continued forward against the Daedra and she charges quickly towards them. Suddenly, Iris backs up again and she notices that she is standing behind Ragnar, Ragnar looks at her again to see if she is alright.

"Looks like the Arrow wound that you got protecting the Woman has not quite healed yet hasn't it?" Hadvar asked.

"Iris, listen close," Ragnar said. "Hightail it through the forest. I'll buy you a chance."

"But Ragnar?" She asked.

"Don't stand there and stare! Get moving!"

"Ragnar, I can't!"

"What are you doing? Run, now!"

"No... I can't do that. I can't just... run off alone!"

Then, Hadvar looks at Iris for a long while and he thought of something that he can do to her, and then shouts at the Daedra, "Fire! Shoot the Woman to death!"

Then, the Daedra pull out their Bows and their Arrows and they aim and shoot at Iris as she stands there. Then, Ragnar runs over to her and she stares at him as he blocks all of the Arrows with his Greatsword and his cape. "Ragnar!" Iris Shouted.

Then, an Arrow lands onto his left arm as he was defending Iris from the Arrows that were flying

towards her. "God, you are such a weakling. Not once, but twice, for just one Woman! What a simpleton."

"Why, Ragnar... why?" She asked.

As Iris puts her hand onto Ragnar's shoulder, Ragnar pulls his arm away from her and he takes the Arrow out of his shoulder. "Don't get the wrong idea," Ragnar said to her. "Sick as you are, you are just in my way, so get out of here. It's not my way to run from my enemies. Besides I got a score to settle with these wretched beasts.

### III

"It's like you said before. Maybe I am satisfied just so long as I can swing my sword against my enemies. Tell me, is this right for you? Dying in a place like this? Here, this worthless place.

"Is this where it ends for you? Is what you want that cheap? A Sword always belongs in it's Sheathe. Go back. Return to the Sheathe which your master holds."

"Don't be Afraid!" Hadvar Shouted, "Surround them!"

"Go back and find Delphine," Ragnar said. "Stay with her no matter the cost."

Then, a group of Daedra charges after Ragnar and Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he slices off their heads, he cuts them in half, and he cleaves them

open. Then, Ragnar turns around and he looks at Iris in a more furious and a more serious attitude as he speaks with her. "Don't just stand there! GO!"

Iris stands there and she stares at Ragnar as he speaks to her and she could not even move a single step as she stared at him.

"NOW! GET OUT OF HERE!!" He Shouted.

Then, Iris turns around and she starts to run from Ragnar as he stayed behind to fight off these Daedra before him. "I promise to bring Delphine back with me! Until then, don't die!" She said.

And so, Iris runs from Ragnar and the Daedra and he did not look at her as she ran away but only at his enemies. "Don't let her escape! KILL HER!!" Hadvar Shouted.

Then, a small group of Daedra went on ahead to charge quickly towards Iris to hunt her down and kill her. "Hang on! You can chase women after you've finished your job. Bunch of wage thieves." Ragnar said.

And so, another group of Daedra charged towards Ragnar as he was standing there with his Greatsword pointed straight at them. And then, Ragnar charged against them and then he swings his Greatsword and he begins to kill every single Daedra that he sees before him. He cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open as more and more Daedra start to come towards him. Lots of



Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Ragnar Continued his way against the Daedra and he goes out and kills every Daedra with his long Sword.

And then, Ragnar approaches himself before the rest of the Daedra that were before him and he stood there and he stares at all of them. "All of you! What are you waiting for?" Hadvar Shouted, "No matter how skilled he is, he is just one wounded mortal! It's no big deal, just surround him!

"There were just a hundred of us!"

"If you are just going to stand here all night, then I will take my leave." Ragnar said.

Then, all of the Daedra started to charge directly towards Ragnar as he continues to stand there and wait for someone to kill him. Meanwhile, Iris was running in the forest when suddenly she tripped over a branch of a tree; then she gets herself up from the ground and then she sees a group of Daedra chasing behind her. "Daedra! Four... no, five!" She said.

Then one Daedra charged after her; Iris pulls out her Sword and then she charges towards the Daedra and she then slices the Daedra's neck open and that Daedra dies. Then another Daedra was before her and she charges at it and stabs it in the mouth and that Daedra also dies. Iris then goes out and she continues

to run as fast as she can to get herself away from the Daedra that were behind her. Meanwhile, Ragnar continues Kill much more Daedra that were charging quickly towards him as he swings his Greatsword. He cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open as more and more Daedra keep coming towards him.

Suddenly, one Daedra pulls out his Crossbow and he aims it at Ragnar and then he shoots at him and it lands onto his left hand. Then, Ragnar goes over to that Daedra and then he stabs him in the throat and then he cuts off his head. "Good!" Hadvar said, "His left hand is now crippled. Now he won't be able to swing that ridiculously big Sword of his around so easily!"

Then, Ragnar looks at his left hand and then he takes out the Arrow from his hand; he then looks at all of the other Daedra that surrounded him. "Now this has gotten interesting!" Ragnar said.

Meanwhile, Iris was still running as fast as possible from the Daedra; she then falls down to the ground and not being able to move. "No use... I can't... I can't run anymore!" She said.

Then a Daedra appears behind Iris and then it swings its mace at her; then she uses her Sword and she slices off the Daedra's head. Then, she got up and she saw more Daedra show up before her; she then uses her Sword and she blocks the attacks from a Daedra

but then another Daedra swings his Sword at her and it hits her left arm and then she falls backwards. Iris then drops her Sword and she reaches over to try and grab it but the Daedra kick the Sword away from her. And then one of them pick her up and then that Daedra holds onto her and she could not move at all. "You caused us a lot of trouble, little girl," the Daedra said. "We will put you out of your misery soon enough, but you and I are gonna have some fun. We are here to thank you, personally."

Then, the Daedra took off Iris's Armor and then all he could see was her shirt and her pants that she wore under her Armor. She began to feel embarrassed.

#### IV

Iris begins to look away from the Daedra and not stare at him as he begins to arouse her and see her tremble. "Don't look that way," the Daedra said. "We are going to give you some fun before we send you to the afterlife. So much fun that you will thank us!"

Then, the Daedra lets his face go closer to Iris's face and he then sees that she is being frustrated by him. "What's wrong? You scared? Maybe you do intend to follow a Ranger until the very end, but you are pretty cute in this position." The Daedra said.

The Daedra then puts his head onto Iris's neck and he begins to smell her and she stared openly at the Moon. The other Daedra who were with this one Daedra began to laugh and shriek as they watch this Daedra have his way with Iris. *It's happening, again.* She thinks to herself. *I can't even shove a creep like him aside... my arm. I feel so powerless.*

"Don't even think about biting your tongue. It would be boring indeed, if you died now." The Daedra said.

Then, Iris remembers the words that Ragnar spoke to her before she ran away from him to catch and find Delphine. "I will not bite my tongue." She said.

"Oh really?" The Daedra asked. Then, he looked at the other Daedra who were standing there with him and he says to them, "Well, she's desperate now. This won't be as exciting if she doesn't struggle a bit."

The other Daedra laughs along with him as he said this to them; then Iris pulls out the Dagger that Ragnar gave to her. "However, I'll be Damned if I let this happen to me!"

Iris then uses the Dagger and she sticks it into the Daedra's eyeball, this causes the Daedra to scream in pain as the Dagger is stuck inside of him. Then, Iris lets herself go from the Daedra's grasp and she pulls the Dagger out of his Eye. She then reached for her Sword and she runs towards the Daedra to kill them

all before they do something else to here. But before she could do anything, a large Black Arrow came and it shot one of the Daedra. The Arrow flew at the Daedra's head and it flew so fast that his head flew off of his body and he flew backwards and he was dead.

Iris then looks behind her and then a large figure walks from behind the shadows, it was Delphine that has done this deed. "That is close Enough," she said. "That Girl belongs to me, so she won't come cheap."

Meanwhile, Ragnar is still killing quite a number of Daedra that continued to stand before him as he was killing every last one that he sees. That entire group of Daedra could not figure out how and why he was killing them all so quickly and they all stood there in fear. "Impossible!" Hadvar Shouted, "With one Arm, he has killed half a hundred Daedra. This isn't just a fluke!"

And before he could kill another Daedra that would stand in his way, Ragnar turns his head and he looks at Hadvar and he asks him "What? There's still that many left?"

Then he looks at every single one of the Daedra that was still alive before him and they were more afraid than ever. "The Sun is going to come up before I finish splitting your heads." He said.

Hadvar then looks at all of the Daedra that stood before him. "Do not falter! He can barely stand now! Fall upon him at once!"

Then, a few Daedra with Spears came towards Ragnar; one of them slashed his face, the other slashed his arm, and the other slashed his leg. Then, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he slashed them and he kills them and he begins to think to himself while killing these Daedra before him. *What the Hell am I doing? In this Dumb place, risking my life so cheaply. Is it for her?*

*No, probably not, right now, there's no time to think. All there is now is how to cut, how to kill, that is all. Even these thoughts will slip my mind in time. And then, only, the beat of my Heart still remains.*

Meanwhile, Iris walks slowly before Delphine as she puts away her Bow and finished killing the other few Daedra, Iris is Wounded and she can barely walk. "Ah, Iris," Delphine said. "There you are. I've looked everywhere for you and Ragnar. By the way, where is Ragnar?"

Iris then goes towards Delphine and she wraps her arms around her and she hugs her and she could not let go. "Oh, Delphine... you have to help me... we have to hurry!" She said.

"What is it? What happened to Ragnar?"  
Delphine asked.

"He's... Ragnar is... hurry! We must Hurry!"

Delphine begins to see tears shed down Iris's eyes as she spoke to her as she was trying to tell her What happened to Ragnar. "So I could get away, Ragnar... he stayed behind with all of our Enemies. If we don't hurry... he... he will die!" Iris answered.

Delphine then wipes a tear away from Iris's face with her finger and she stares down at her for a long while. "Where is Ragnar now?" She asked.

Iris looks behind her in the Forest as she was trying to remember where she was last before she came here. "He's... this way... He's this way. Follow me!" She said.

Iris then runs from Delphine and back to where the Battle was and then Delphine ran with her to catch up with her. "Be in time, please be in time." Iris whispers.

Meanwhile, Ragnar continues his way in battle and he continued on and he kills every last One Of the Daedra that would stand before him to try and cut him down to kill him here.

## V

And so, all of those Daedra that were before him were now dead and then Hadvar walks towards him and he speaks with him, saying, "Well done, Ranger.

You have done what nobody else would ever dare to do, one man against a hundred dark beasts. So now, you shall taste my power and my full strength before you. Let's see if you can survive how a real Daedra does battle. Prepare yourself for our very Battle in this Night!"

And then, Hadvar pulls out his Daedric Greatsword and he begins to walk slowly towards him as the Night begins to slowly fade. And then, Ragnar held onto his Greatsword and he defended himself and he kept his distance before Hadvar. Hadvar charges after Ragnar and he swings his Greatsword and he tries to attack Ragnar, and he blocks all of his attacks. Then, Ragnar uses his Greatsword and he attacks Hadvar and he began to be backing up from his Greatsword. Ragnar's Greatsword and Hadvar's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning.

Again, Hadvar charges after Ragnar and he swings his Greatsword and he tries to attack Ragnar, and he blocks all of his attacks. Then again, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he attacks Hadvar and he began to be backing up from his Greatsword. And again, Ragnar's Greatsword and Hadvar's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Yet again, Hadvar charges after Ragnar and he swings his Greatsword and he tries to



attack Ragnar, and he blocks all of his attacks. Then yet again, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he attacks Hadvar and he began to be backing up from his Greatsword.

And yet again, Ragnar's Greatsword and Hadvar's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Once more, Hadvar charges after Ragnar and he swings his Greatsword and he tries to attack Ragnar, and he blocks all of his attacks. Then once more, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he attacks Hadvar and he began to be backing up from his Greatsword. And once more, Ragnar's Greatsword and Hadvar's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Then, with all of his anger and all of his fury, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he slashed Hadvar across his chest and he falls down to the ground.

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. Then Hadvar began to let himself stand up for a little bit and he lets him up slowly as his blood began to leave his body. "You challenge me, mortal?! A Daedra, one who is more powerful and mighty than all? Satan should have kept you where you belonged. No matter how many more Demons will fall, there will always be another to stand against you."

"They will fall as well." Ragnar said.

"The Death of our Lord means the Death of us all." Hadvar said.

"Then prepare for your death, Daedra."

"You will never defeat Satan, Ranger. You will forfeit your life in trying."

"Of all the lives that you should worry about, unholy one, mine is not one of them."

"My Death will not lead you to Satan or the Daedric Lords."

"That is where you are wrong."

Then, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he slices off Hadvar's head and he watches as his head flew down to the ground. And so, Ragnar defeated all of those Daedra that were before him as he was here and was battling them off. But, he was wounded and he could not fight another one of his enemies until the Morning Sun came for everyone. Ragnar lays himself down onto the ground and he decides to rest himself besides a large tree along with his enemies who were now dead. He could no longer think of anything else for the burden was too great for even him to handle.

Meanwhile, a group of Demons surrounded Delphine as she was continuing her search for Ragnar on this Dark Road. The Demons pull out their Swords and their Axes and they pointed their Weapons towards Delphine to cut her down. Then, Delphine

pulls out her Greatsword and she holds onto it and she keeps her distance in herself. Then, Delphine begins to charge quickly towards them and she begins to kill every single one of those Demons. She blocks every one of their attacks and she dodged their every move that they were giving to her.

Iris watches on as Delphine continues to kill these Demons before her and she was being shocked at what she was witnessing. She was now something less human when she continues to fight against the Demons that were before her. Nothing ever stood out in her way for it was Demons that were ever present in her sight as she was killing them. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Delphine finishes killing those Demons that were before her and she puts her Greatsword back to her sheathe.

She had Iris Continue searching for Ragnar wherever he could possibly be in this long and Dark forest. "It's here!" She Shouted.

Then Iris and Delphine look and stare at the many dead Daedra that Ragnar Killed all by himself. The ground crumbled with Dead bodies everywhere as they look and stare at the Awful and brutal deed that Ragnar has done against them. "I can't believe this," Iris said.

"Can it be? There's about a hundred dead corpses. He couldn't have... all by himself?" Delphine said.

And so they looked around every large part in this forest. "Ragnar! Ragnar, where are you?" Iris asked.

Then Iris sees Ragnar sleeping beside a large tree, signaling that he was not dead but he definitely needed lots and lots of rest before doing anything else.

## CHAPTER 7: REQUIEM

Ragnar and Iris Get onto the long and Dark Road to search for Delphine and stay with her on the rest of their journey. But suddenly, they come across the Daedra that were following them all this time and were trying to hunt them down. And so, they battled against Ragnar and Iris before they could even go anywhere else to try and survive the Night. Ragnar defeats the rest of the Daedra and he tells Iris to run and find Delphine all by herself as he goes and kills the rest of them. He did not stop until every last one of them is dead and made sure that they could no longer walk the Earth.

Thinking that it was a good idea to stay behind and defeat all of those Daedra before you, Well played

Ragnar. But this will be one of many times where you cannot believe that you survived the onslaught of Daedra. But know and understand this, the Onslaught for you against the Demons will grow ever stronger as they try to hunt you down. They will hunt you down and feed your soul to the deepest pits of Hell and make you their favorite pets for all eternity. But for now, rest easily, for even though you have Delphine on her side, know that she will not always be there for you. Farewell, for now.

## I

"Ragnar!" Iris called his name. And as she sees him sleeping onto the giant Tree that was behind him, she puts her hands onto his shoulders and tries to wake him up. "Ragnar. Hey, Ragnar. Please, get up... Ragnar! Don't leave me here, not now! Ragnar!" She Shouted.

Ragnar slowly puts his hands onto her shoulders and he slowly gets himself up from the ground and then he speaks with her, saying, "Stop. Please... don't shake me. You'll just make the Wounds worse."

"Oh, Ragnar." Iris said.

Then she puts her arms around him and she hugs him, then Delphine walks over to him and she tells them that they must leave this place. They leave

that forest and then Iris and Delphine help Ragnar walk forward for he was indeed tired from that battle with the Daedra. There, indeed, lay the last of those Daedra who hid themselves inside the mountains while there are others who took over the many Kingdoms of the Earth. Delphine then picks up Iris's Armor which fell from the last battle and she takes it with her and she finds a place for them to rest from that long and terrible Battle. They were all very tired and they needed a very long rest for a long while.

Ragnar and Iris rested themselves for a very long time after the battle that they had with the Daedra but there will be more of them out there. They were tired, sore, and Wounded, so they could not do anything else but sleep under the Moon and the starry night sky. But Delphine did not sleep, while they were sleeping, Delphine tended to their wounds for they were few on Iris but many on Ragnar. The Wounds on Ragnar were many and there were many scars but mostly on his arms and his legs. The Wounds on Iris were few and she also left scars but it was just a few on her left arm and nothing worse than Ragnar's Wounds.

And so, Delphine finishes putting bandages on Ragnar and Iris; she lets Ragnar and Iris sleep for a good while for truly, they needed it.

About two hours later after resting herself, Iris opens her eyes and she slowly began to get herself up.

Then Delphine puts her hands onto her and she speaks with her, saying, "Easy... easy. Don't get up so quickly. How are you feeling?"

"I'm fine, I guess," Iris answered. "Suddenly, I... I feel much better. What did you do?"

Then Delphine pulls out a bag that was filled with what seemed to be powder but it was really medicine that she pulls out. "I used a bit of this." She said.

"Powder?" Iris asked.

"It's Medicine," Delphine said. "Made by the Elves. When you are in need of healing from a long battle or from an accident, you use a bit of this on you. They called it 'Elf Dust'. The Elves were an interesting race."

"Elves?"

"Its True. Well, I guess not too many people know or believe in them these days. They used to exist. They existed long before the age of Man. Whether you believe in them or not doesn't matter, just that the powder is certified effective.

"I've escaped death even on the Battlefield thanks to that stuff. This is really rare for even us to handle."

"But something so valuable."

"Don't sweat it. It's a good deal if you think about it, one bag of medicine for a hundred dead Enemies."



Iris looks at the Elf dust and then she looks at Delphine, she did not know what else to say, so she looks down and she speaks with her again, saying, "Delphine?"

"Yes, What is it?" Delphine asked.

"I... I'm sorry. I... I failed him," Iris said. "I failed Ragnar and I failed you. It was because of me that we got separated. It was because of me that Ragnar has so many wounds.

"I let him down. I let down the man that I followed. I... I'm sorry, but I... I should stay away from him... for his sake."

"Iris, you did not fail anyone. You never have. Even if you don't believe him, you must trust him. He is your only hope for now. Has he been teaching you to kill?"

"He has been teaching me to hunt and to survive."

"Indeed. Even in these times, one must think before he acts. From now until the End of Days, they will hunt you down like prey from a Predator. You have shown your skill and have killed with your Sword. But, remember that you only kill in defense of yourself and never as an indulgence. For truly, there are consequences for killing in Cold Blood."

"Delphine? How do you know this? Please, I want to know. What has led you to killing all of these

Demons and why do you do it? What has made you despise everything against your enemies? Why are we even fighting these Demons?"

"Why do you want to know that? Nobody ever told you this? Are you telling me, no one you know ever told you the truth?"

"No. Nobody ever told me. Nobody ever said anything about it or even dare mention it."

"Very well then. I will tell you, for I know how it all happened."

Then, Delphine stood up and she looked at the Morning Sky before her and then she began to speak with Iris, saying, "I do not know why the Demons have come to this World in the first place. I always asked myself that and nobody has ever seemed to ask me. It all started in ages long past and it seemed that my people were the first to experience such things.

## II

"An old, yet mysterious friend of mine long ago told me 'Why is it that men enjoy little more than shedding blood?' It could certainly be that men possess that savage side. But that is a tool by which they secure and protect a precious thing, I suppose it is like a double-edged Sword."

"Precious thing? Like family or a Sweetheart?"

"There are some like that. But for a man, before he can obtain those two, perhaps he must come upon one other precious thing."

"One other precious thing?"

"For no other's sake. To accomplish it for him, for himself. A dream."

"Dream."

"One who dreams of world domination. One who devotes his whole life to the thorough tempering of one Sword. If there is a Dream which takes one his whole life to find, there are also dreams which, like storms, devour tens of thousands of other dreams. With no relation to social status, class background. Whether it suits them or not, people yearn for a Dream.

"Sustained by a Dream, hurt by a Dream, revived by a Dream, or even killed by it. And even after being abandoned by a Dream, it continues to smolder from the bottom of one's heart, probably until the verge of death. A man should envision such a lifetime once. A life spent as a Martyr, to the Lord God. The Lord is your God, Iris.

"The creator of heaven and Earth, the source of all light. The almighty father, the one who brings you deliverance. The key to everlasting life, the one who forgives all of your trespasses. Ultimately to be born,

and to live simply for no better reason, I can't abide such a lifestyle."

And then, Iris was looking down at the ground and Delphine turns around and she looks at her for a moment. "Forgive me, I've chattered so. It must have been a boring topic for someone like you." She said.

"Not at all. This is the first time I have ever seen someone like you speak this way." Iris said. "Delphine, you're very powerful for a Warrior. The first time I ever laid eyes on you, I thought that you would leave me there and not be anywhere else. But, you're different from the rest of the people that I know.

"You've already shown both me and Ragnar your true power and your strength Against our enemies. You're also pretty smart for someone who has roamed the many lands of this World, you seem to know everything. And right now, you say the kinds of things to me a philosopher would say. I see before me a Woman who knows what it is like about the many lands that she has traveled. I begin to understand why you seem to defend both me and Ragnar with all the strength in you."

Then, Delphine speaks with her again, saying, "Well, it does take a lot of knowledge and a lot of Skill to know and understand what this World contains. It was not by luck that I know so much about this World but it was for I have witnessed it all myself. I have told

you before, I am bound for Hell and nothing of my soul is peaceful. The Devil is coming for me and one day he will come at a time that I will not expect for him to come. He will come and I will await whatever lies before me in the Afterlife.

"But Fate has given me a second chance: to defeat the Great Evil of this Earth and either save these people or avenge them. And it is with our hand that all that the Daedric Lords have wrought will be undone. I will not suffer their Bloodline to live any longer and I shall continue to fight on to the death. Until every last one of these Demons are back to whence they came, I fear that I must live on in this World until Satan comes for me and I await my fate."

Then, Iris and Delphine looks at each other and they stare at each other for a long while before they could say anything else to each other. "Such amazing confidence." Iris said.

"Yes. That is how I achieved everything so far. There were days when I had not even a slice of Bread to eat. But now, I can even talk like this to you, a Skillful Hunter and an Adventurer." Delphine said.

Then, Delphine walks over to her and she sits beside her for now, and she had much more to say to her. "Iris, I just want to let you know, that if anything happens, you can speak with me. Don't let that Ranger get you into too much trouble. I also want to remind

you that I have the answer to your every question when it comes to hunting down monsters. I'll be forever grateful to offer you aid and comfort when you are in grave danger. I don't know what's in store for the both of us, but I can guarantee that you will always be under my protection even if Ragnar or you don't deserve to have it.

"I remember this for even I wanted to know before if I could really trust anyone in this Earth to protect me. I searched far and wide but I could not find anyone for I knew on that day that I could not hide in the shadows for the rest of my life. I also remember a portion of a Story, a play that I once read, and it was one of my favorites. Macbeth as I remember the title, Macbeth hears of the Death of his Wife and he never knew that day would ever come while he was still ruling over Scotland in power. Before he met his own fate by the hands of Macduff, he wanted more time for such a word with his wife before she died.

"Macbeth Knows that he could no longer hide himself from the temptations and the visions that laid before him.

### III

"And so, he said this to himself, 'She should've died hereafter, there may have been more time for

such a word. Tomorrow and Tomorrow and Tomorrow, creeps in this petty pace from day to day to the last syllable of recorded time. And all our yesterdays have lighted fools the way to dusty death. Out, Out brief candle. Life is but a walking shadow, a poor player that struts and frets his hour upon the stage and then is heard no more.

"It is a Tale told by an Idiot, full of sound and fury, signifying nothing."

Then, Iris stared at Delphine after she told her about Macbeth and how she knew everything about that play. Then Delphine takes off her Cape and she wraps it around Iris and she begins to speak with her again, saying, "Iris, we will move on and we will continue forward in this life. We will never give in to our enemies, we must be better and we must be stronger. We are not fighting these Demons because we have to, we are fighting them because we must. Don't ever forget this."

Then, Delphine looks up to the sky and she closes her eyes and as Iris looks down to the ground, Delphine began to sing this Hymn, silently.

*My Hope is built on nothing less than  
Jesus blood and righteousness;  
I dare not trust the sweetest frame,  
But wholly lean on Jesus name.*

*On Christ, the Solid Rock I stand;  
All other ground is sinking sand,  
All other ground is sinking sand.*

*When darkness veils his lovely face,  
I rest on his unchanging grace;  
In every high and stormy gale,  
My Anchor Holds within the Veil.*

*On Christ the Solid Rock I stand;  
All other ground is sinking sand,  
All other ground is sinking sand.*

*His oath, his covenant, his blood  
Support me in the whelming flood;  
When all around my soul gives way,  
He then is all my hope and stay.*

*On Christ the Solid Rock I stand;  
All other ground is sinking sand,  
All other ground is sinking sand.*

*When he shall come with trumpet sound,  
O may I Then in him be found;  
Dressed in his righteousness alone,  
Faultless to stand before the Throne.*



*On Christ the Solid Rock I stand;  
All other ground is sinking sand,  
All other ground is sinking sand.*

And so, Delphine finishes her singing and she lets herself up from the ground and then she looks at Iris as she stood up. "You can go now, Iris. Unless there is something else that you wish to ask me." She said.

"I have nothing more to say." Iris said.

"Very well, I'll be right here if you need me." Delphine said.

Then, Iris stands up and she gives Delphine back her cape and she walks away from her and she begins to look for Ragnar where he was previously sleeping at.

"Ragnar?" She called his name. But Ragnar was not there and she looked behind herself and she asked herself, "Now where could he possibly be at?"

Iris then looks up and she sees Ragnar sitting near a cliff, his body was covered in bandages and he was starrng at the starry Night Sky. And so, Iris walks forward towards the cliff and she walks onto the Ground that Ragnar was sitting on. Ragnar sees before him the morning sky and what else would lie before him while he pushes onward on his Journey. And as Iris walks before him, Ragnar looks back at her, Iris

saw him and she didn't know what else to say or what she could do but help him out. "What is it?" Ragnar asked.

"Is this okay? Are you not going to rest?" Iris asked.

"If I'm down there, my body feels like it's on fire. But up here, it's not so hot. I can rest." He answered.

Then Iris went over and she goes next to Ragnar and she began to take off his bandages that were on his body. "Hey." He said.

"Don't move." Iris said.

Iris then took off the rest of his bandages, she then used her hand and took some of the Elf dust and rubs it on Ragnar's arm. *The pain... it's fading.* He thought.

"What is that stuff?" He asked.

"Delphine Gave it to me. Mystical healing, medicine she said. Alright, give me your back." Iris answered.

Ragnar turns around and she looks at his back and then she puts some of the Elf dust on his back. "It's not something you should worry about." Ragnar said.

"What?" Iris asked.

"That was something I did on my own. It wasn't really for your sake. Fighting is more of my nature than running away." He said.

"So, the reason you fought over a hundred of our enemies is because it isn't in your nature to run away."

Then, Ragnar turns around and he looks at Iris for a long while and then he turns back around and faces forward and he says to her, "Yes, something like that. Besides, I had a score to settle with those Daedra who were before us. I was only focusing on swinging my blade and I know that he would never escape. He could never escape me, so I found him and I killed him."

#### IV

"He bled like a pig and now he serves the afterlife for all eternity. But still, to be blunt, and I thought this then, too. Compared to what you're doing, me fighting over a hundred Demons, doesn't really matter."

Then Iris went over and she sat next to Ragnar, and then he spoke with her again, saying, "It's not just about you. Delphine is the same way. She's got something she had bet her entire life on. I think that kind of thing is amazing. Compared to that, if I were to go out and fight a hundred or even a thousand of my enemies, it would really not be any big deal. That's what I thought."

"Ragnar?" Iris asked.

"Nice view, is it not?" He spoke, "Whether you know this or not, there were many Gods and Kings that roamed this Earth. Many Kings were righteous and defended his people. But then there were those Kings that were tyrants, they made slaves with their people. The Gods were worshipped by many.

"The Kings rejected the only God that could save them, the Lord. The Kings of those times worshipped many Idols and they wished for many Thrones to sit upon and so they wished to conquer each other and take their lands. Well, I guess everyone has staked themselves on lost causes. So when I look out there to the Stars, it's like each one of those lights, contains little dreams and hopes, that's the way it looks."

"Campfire of Dreams." She said.

"You're a pretty smooth talker. You sound like some princess."

"Don't say that. But, you're right. Maybe they've all brought their own individual little flames together here. You could scatter them just by blowing. So all those little flames throw themselves into the biggest fire."

Ragnar then looks at Iris for a long while and he continues to look at her and he speaks to her, saying, "But you know, my flame is not here. As for me, maybe I'm just warming myself by that Campfire for a bit. Maybe I just stopped in by chance."

"Ragnar." She said his name. Then, Ragnar lifts up his Sword and he held it up to the sky and he says to her, "As long as I have this, I'm confident that I can survive any battle. That's how it's been up until now, even before I let you follow me until the end, no matter how badly the battle was lost, I myself was sure to survive. Like this time, but still, it doesn't really mean much.

"I was on the battlefield before I was old enough to understand things. The mercenary leader who raised me taught me nothing beyond how to wield a Sword. I had nothing but this. I don't want to die, but just because I don't want to die, just because I don't know more than how to wield this, I kept fighting in battles. And maybe, more than anything, I've always tried to leave the most essential reason for fighting up to other people."

"Ragnar... are you sure about this?" Iris asked.

"I hope I'm not boring you, am I? I apologize if I brought it up." He said.

"Oh, not at all." She said.

Then, Ragnar pouts his Sword down and he looks at the sky that was before him as he was sitting down. "Ragnar, you don't mean that, right? Don't tell me you're doing this, are you thinking of... facing them... all by yourself?" Iris asked.

Then, Ragnar once again looked at Iris for a long while and then he spoke to her, saying, "I've told you before, I'm fighting until the end, even if I have to crawl my way out of battle, it would not mean anything."

"And then, afterwards?" She asked.

"I don't know. My fate will come before me and it will come at a blink of an eye. I don't know if I defeat him, whether there will be a return journey or not."

Then, Iris puts her hand on Ragnar's hand and she spoke with him, saying, "Please. You already suffered enough, Don't do this. Don't do this to yourself."

"I will not give in to my oppressors. There is no other way. Even if there was, it will not work." Ragnar said.

"Yes, there is something." She said.

Then, Ragnar puts his hand on Iris's shoulder and he holds onto it to calm her down and not be afraid and then he says to her, "It will be my fight, the time is soon coming when you must carry on without me. If those Daedric Lords summon Satan from his Throne, the whole world will be wiped out and nothing will stop him, I cannot walk away. I will never walk away."

"You... you will die." Iris said.

"I can live with out." Ragnar said.

Then, Iris looks at him for a long while and then she gets even closer towards Ragnar and he stares at her for a few seconds. And then she asks him, "Ragnar, I'm cold. And I feel a bit lonely, sometimes. Can I stay with you for a bit longer?"

"Of course you can." He answered.

Then, Iris stays with Ragnar for a while longer than she used to be and he wraps his arm onto her shoulder as they watch the Sky. Something strange began to be in Iris's mind as she was staying with Ragnar and sitting beside him. Her heart began to change into something that she did not expect when she was with Ragnar on his Journey. It appears as if she was falling for him on his Dangerous Path and she was beginning to admire him. He showed her some Love as they were pushing forward together and then their minds would also change into something unexpected.

Unfortunately, this would be the only time besides other really rare occasions on which they would show their love for each other. Then, Iris looks up at Ragnar once again and then she asks him, "Ragnar, do you mind... scratching my back?"

"Can I?" He asked.

"Yes, of course." Iris answered.

Then Ragnar began to think about it for a long while and then he gets himself up from the ground and

then he gets behind her back. Then Ragnar, without hesitation, began to slowly take off Iris's shirt as she was still sitting down on the ground. Then, halfway through while doing it, Iris stops his hand from going any higher as his hand was touching the side of her stomach.

## V

"Wait," Iris said. "I... I can take it off myself. This is embarrassing."

"Fine." Ragnar said.

Then, Iris waited for him to get his hand out from under her shirt and then Ragnar looks away for a short while. Then, Iris began to take off her shirt and she uses her shirt to cover her breasts and all Ragnar could see was her bare back. "Please... be gentle." She said.

"I'll make sure of it." Ragnar said.

Then, Ragnar slowly lets his hand go towards Iris's back and then, without hesitation, he began to scratch her back. Iris began to feel her back being scratched by this Man behind her as she continued to be sitting down. As she sat down, she began to breathe in and breathe out and she closes her eyes and look up to the sky above her. Ragnar scratches her back as gently as he could as she continued to sit with him on



this bright morning. Then, Ragnar looks towards Iris and he speaks with her, saying, "You want to know something, Iris? Your body is really beautiful."

Then, Iris opens her eyes and her eyes grew bigger and she gasps as he told her this when she was sitting down. "Sooner or later, once I have finished this Journey, perhaps you and I can live someplace together." Ragnar said.

The thought overflows Iris's mind as Ragnar told her this and she looks at the ground and she asks him, "Together, really?"

"Of course," he answered. "The World will no longer need to suffer from these Demons. The World will be in peace once again and you and I will see it through once we are finished. We can live in the mountains, we can build our House in the forest, or we can even live near a large field and watch and see which animals we can hunt together. And once we do that, we will never have to fight another Creature of the Night ever again.

"From now until the Rest of our lives, we will remember how we have achieved what no other being will ever do."

"That's sounds like a great idea," Iris said. "But how can you be sure about that?"

"I believe that I have told you that I will always be by your side and I will always protect you from

these Demons," Ragnar said. "But never have I ever said that you must stay away from me if you wish to live and see it through until the End."

"Ragnar, don't you ever think that if you and I were together, you would always be there for me?"

"It's a Coward's way out of this life, if he abandons his own partner and his follower. Only a Fool would leave them all behind and they would slowly fade away and never be known by any ever again. You are no Fool, Iris and I will not allow anyone to treat you like that. Even if I were to leave you, it would be a price that I shall pay and regret that I have ever done such a thing. I have sworn to myself that I will Guard you and I will shield you from any harm that ever comes to you."

"Will you really do that? Will you ever leave this life that you have chosen and could you really learn to live like a normal man would live?"

"No. It's too late. I've made too many sacrifices. Too many to ever come back from. I can't."

"Ragnar?"

"Even worse, I haven't stopped. I have abandoned my Destiny. I cannot do so again. If we simply put an end to the Daedric Lords, we will truly never fight another Demon ever again? Will we truly see and find peace in the end when all of the Demons are sent back to Hell?"

"No. They will keep coming, they will be after me more than you. They will be after my own Blood and they will wish that my head is on top of a Spear and my Body torn to shreds before I can even scream. Delphine will blame anything on me and she'll keep you on a chain to protect you. If I die now, Iris they will be after you as well and you're just a beginner Hunter you won't make it through as much as I will.

"I know that I might die if I go through with this. But still, I have to do it, both for your sake and Delphine's. Even if it means that I must leave everything that I love behind, even you that I am supposed to protect with my very life! I am not just any ordinary Hunter, I am selfish, cruel, and I am just as any Coward that I have ever met. Even if it means that I myself must become a Dark being just to defeat my enemies with my bare hands!"

Iris then turns around and she looks at Ragnar for a very long time and she sees that he begins to shed a tear down his eye. Then, she gets even closer to Ragnar and she touches his face and she wipes a Tear away from his face as he stares down in guilt and shame. "Ragnar, is this what it means to be a Hunter?" She asked.

Ragnar remains silent and he did not speak a Word towards Iris as she asked him this thing which was rather important to her. Then, Ragnar looks down

to the ground and he begins to shed another tear down his eye as he was in front of her. Iris then gets up from the ground and she holds onto Ragnar's head and she gives him a hug to comfort him of his sorrows. Then, Ragnar started to feel a bit better now than he was before and he, for the first time in a very long time, started to feel love come into his Soul.

## **CHAPTER 8: THE ADVENT**

Ragnar and Iris takes a long rest after they have finished battling the Large Army of Daedra that Dark Night. As they rested their wounds, Delphine tended to them and Iris was awake and she wanted to speak with Delphine. Delphine tells Iris her reason for fighting these Demons because she is indeed bound for Hell until she hunts down and Destroys the Grim Reaper. Then, Iris goes and meets Ragnar as he was resting from that long battle that they finished having

for themselves. Ragnar began to feel sorrowful for what was lying ahead for him towards the end of his Long and Dark Journey and Iris began to show him Love.

Iris's Heart And Soul has changed into that which she did not expect for herself to witness as she was with Ragnar. She started to feel for him and she started to admire him for all the things that he has done for her. All Ragnar has ever done was simply protect her with his very life and Iris was being defended when it came to battling against monsters and Demons. But there will be more Demons and there will more Monsters to fight against. Ragnar, Iris and Delphine prepare themselves for the challenges that will be for them in the future. Farewell, for now.

## I

Ragnar and Iris began to be sleeping with each other as they were here under the Morning sun before them. Ragnar's Arm was all around Iris as he was holding her and warming her up as they were sleeping together. Ragnar was a totally different person now, he now had someone to protect and defend with his very life instead of being all by himself. Then, Ragnar began to open his eyes and he looks down at Iris as she

was sleeping with him. Then, he began to think to himself, *Why am I so scared?*

*Not alone. Yes, it's been a long time, ever since I've gained the ability to Love. When I think about it, I have always fought these Battles, alone. I had forgotten, this sense of unease unless my Sword is right next to me. But I never forget how the Night Sky is this vast and this deep.*

*Of course, I could've avoided nights like this back then, I never even thought to try. And then, he began to look down to the ground and down at Iris as he was trying to think of something. Maybe I am Once again trying to throw away something irreplaceable that I'll never have again? To be honest, as long as I can feel warm, isn't that good enough? Am I trying to let go of an irreplaceable today for some vague tomorrow I might never find, if it even exists.*

*Even without some big exaggerated dream, people go on Living. In the first place, I got this, an idea from hearing Delphine's words. If I hadn't, so, what would she say if I wanted Iris to live with me and we see it all through in the end. And then, as they slept, Ragnar began to hear the sky turn color as they were sleeping together under this large tree. Then the sound came again towards him as he was sitting there and warming Iris up as the morning sky began and continues forward.*

He looks in the side of him and at the things that are occurring before them as he was sleeping and trying to get some rest. And then he looks down at Iris and he begins to wake her up. "Hey, Iris. Wake up, Iris" he said.

But she could not get up so easily and she was already fast asleep and she was a pretty heavy sleeper for a Hunter. And then, he easily and gently picks up Iris and he lays her softly into the ground and then he begins to walk away from Iris. *What was that, that bloodthirstiness. A Beast?! No. I remember this one Warrior. This is this savagery that feels like it clings, could it be?!* He thought to himself.

Then, Ragnar grabs his Greatsword and he holds onto it and he defends himself from whatever lies before him. Then, a mysterious being with glowing eyes appeared behind him and he did not know where it came from. *It blindsided me, that easily?! I couldn't even react! I can't move, if I move, that's when I'll be killed!*

Then Ragnar looks behind him and he sees the mysterious being as it tries to attack him and kill him where he was standing. Then, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he attacks the mysterious creature behind him, but it didn't die but, it disappeared.

This was something that was off-putting and none of this was making any sense for it was not real

nor was it normal. He looks around himself to see what is truly happening and what is going on around here for he was having such a perfectly good Morning. But he knew this peace will not last forever, because this was Dark times before all of them while they were on this Journey. This Journey will soon be over and maybe they might rest from all the things that they have done. Suddenly, out from the shadows, came Lagertha, the Wolf Queen and she stood before him as mighty as she could ever be.

She had some business to discuss with Ragnar as Iris was still asleep and nobody else would ever hear them. The Wolf Queen was also very mysterious and very suspicious when it came to talking and discussing with them. *Impossible!* He thought. *I'm sure she was right behind me! I've never misread an Enemy's presence once! I could've sworn she was trying to bring her Sword down on me.*

*Wait. I know this Woman, her hair, her clothes, her body, her very presence. She is none other than The Wolf Queen!*

"Well met, Ranger. It's been a long time. So the gears have indeed begun turning." She said.

"Why are you here and what do you want?" Ragnar asked.

"I have foreseen everything, Ranger. Your fate as you fulfill your destiny." She answered.



"What do you mean? And what are you talking about?"

"The Long Road ahead shall be the time of the Advent. You, your follower, and the Ebony Warrior. Those yet unseen of the fleshless flesh. And that unforeseen half of yours shall all be gathered then in that place. A torrent of madness. A tempest of death for which the human body could never atone, shall sweep over you.

"But take heed Ranger. You know very well amongst all others who I am. I am the Wolf Queen, and we are bound together, my life and yours. I have made you what you are now, I have sheltered you through the most difficult events of your life. Surely, you never forgot about me.

"Struggle, contend, wriggle. That alone is the Sword of one who confronts Death. Remember this, Ranger, There will always be a greater enemy coming for you." Then, before she could say anything else, she walks over to him and she puts her hand onto his face and she looks at him deep in the eye.

## II

"I know what it is you yearn for, Ranger."  
Lagertha said.

"I cannot die, until I have fulfilled that which I swore to myself all those years ago." Ragnar said.

"Soon, very soon, my friend. It will all be over." She said.

And so, Lagertha leaves Ragnar there and he stares on as The Wolf Queen leaves him there to watch ever onward. And as he watches her, he begins to see that she began to disappear from reality as he stares at her for a long while. Iris was still asleep under the tree that Ragnar was also sleeping under as the Morning Sun continues rising up to the sky. Then, Ragnar looks down to the ground and then he starts to come back to his senses as he starts to remember her. The Wolf Queen was always with Ragnar ever since he started his life as a Ranger and a Hunter that hunts the Creatures of the Night.

Meanwhile, Lagertha finds herself in reality once again and then she goes forward and she walks towards Delphine. Delphine was asleep as Lagertha was walk-in towards her and she did not know anything about this very thing. Delphine covered herself with her Cape as she was also under a large tree and the Morning continued to grow. And as Delphine was fast asleep, The Wolf Queen kneels down to her and she puts her hand onto her shoulder and she touches her. Then, Delphine lifts up her head

slowly and then she begins to open her Eyes and then sees that Lagertha was there before her.

"Lagertha." Delphine said.

"Yes, old friend. It is I." Lagertha said.

"Why are you here, what do you want this time?" Delphine asked.

"Answer me, Delphine. Are you quite sure that the Ranger will survive along the way?"

"He will be just fine, Lagertha. I have my Sword and so does he, nothing will ever stand in my way. Now, you never answered my question. Why are you here?"

Then, The Wolf Queen stood there and she stares at Delphine for a long while before she could do anything else. "Could I have a little word with you?" Lagertha asked.

"Make it quick, Lagertha." Delphine answered.

"I have something to say to you." She said.

"Go on."

"How longer will you take to have the Ranger and the Hunter under your care as you push forward?"

"What?"

"It's quite simple, Delphine. You go out there into the World and you kill every last Demon, but will there be enough for you to rest for?"

"You know amongst all people that I cannot rest from what I must do in this life, otherwise my soul

shall be fed to the pits of Hell. Surely, you haven't forgotten."

"Of course I know that much, Delphine. But I wouldn't want to waste the rest of my life thinking that I did not know so much more from this Ranger."

"We agreed that we would keep that a Secret."

"There is just so much more that I don't know about. I'm sorry, but there it is."

"They are going to be just fine, Lagertha."

"Of course. But what if they're not. What if you just want to kill all of the Demons and leave the both of them behind to die alone?"

This very question troubles Delphine's very soul and she began to have a fiery anger against the Wolf Queen. Her eyes began to change color and her pupils began to look at that of a Creatures eye and she began to stare at Lagertha. "I will not be questioned by you!" Delphine said.

Then, Lagertha began to back up a bit from Delphine as she slowly gets herself up from the ground and starts walking towards her. "I have told you how it will be," Delphine Shouted. "The Demons will die. Every last one of them shall be fed back to the Pits of Hell!"

Then, Lagertha began to stare directly at Delphine as she began to stare directly at her as well as they stood there. "Lagertha," Delphine said. "The

Wolf Queen, The Wolf of Darkness. The Wolf Mauler Who delights on making noises and pretends to think that she is important and dangerous. Are you going to continue questioning me? Are you going to fight me, Lagertha?!"

"No." Lagertha said as she looks down at the ground.

"Then why are you... still here, making your little noises? Begone, before I slit you up the middle and Rip out your Heart!" Delphine Shouted.

And so, Lagertha leaves her there and she wonders the world, again, but she was always with her in her mind. Lagertha and Delphine were bound together both in life and Death.

### III

As they were bound in life and in Death, they both continued to live in the Lands of the Earth until they have performed that which they must fulfill. Delphine backs up towards the tree and then she sits down onto the ground and then her eyes began to return to normal. She begins to breathe in and breathe out as Lagertha angered her to the very core and she began to calm herself down as it took her a little while to do so. And as she calms herself down, she looks at the lands before her and she looks down to the ground

and stares down. She stared down at this ground that she was sitting on and she did not move from there for a good while.

About a few minutes later, Delphine came back to her senses and she slowly begins to stand up for a bit after being fully awake. And then, she picks up her Greatsword and she holds onto it for a long while and then she walks towards a large cliff. She stares down at this cliff for a good while before she could ever move or even do anything else. And then, she lifts up her Greatsword and she throws it out towards the lands of the Earth and she watches it fly down. She watches it land and fall down onto the ground and then she stares at the Sword as it fell to the Lands of the Earth.

Then, Delphine begins to feel her head and she began to see many images come into her mind as she began to feel dizzy. Then, she falls down to the ground and then she stares down as she feels her head throbbing and having a hard time trying to get these images out of her mind. And so, Delphine began to run from the cliff and she starts to run away from both Ragnar and Iris to reach her Greatsword. The Crissagrim was calling for Delphine for it was her owner and her Sword as she always used it in Battle. She ran as fast as possible to make sure that she

reaches her Sword before anyone else would reach for it.

As She ran, Delphine Continued to hear the presence grow ever stronger and hear the sound grow louder. As it grew louder, her head started to throb even more and she began to feel immense pain as she was running for it. She was running for her own Blade as it continued to call for its rightful owner as it was standing still onto the ground. Nothing ever stopped her and nothing would ever stand in her way as she continued to run for her Sword. The Morning continued ever on and on and the morning clouds began to cover the Sun as she was running on this Road.

Then, as she was running, Delphine began to hear many voices come into her and she began to hear chanting noises. These Chanting sounds were deadly and they spoke of death as if it were already coming straight for her. And so, the noises grew louder and louder and all she could ever hear was the loud voice of Death coming for her. But truly, she didn't have anything to say of the matter for it could not so easily be broken no matter how hard she would try. These Chanting sounds spoke in an ancient language and also spoke Nordic as she kept on running.

Then, Delphine began to find herself in a large forest and she was still running as fast as she ever

could on this long Road. She had her Armor on, but it did not slow her down and she did not hold herself back and she did not give in. Only the foolish would give in to whatever it is they were after and it is a Fool's errand if he abandoned his own destiny. But Delphine did not give in to her Destiny and she would never abandon it no matter what will ever happen. She pushed forward with everything in her and she did not stop running towards her Sword that continued to call for her.

And as she continued to run for her Blade, she began to have many visions that were coming back to her. These Dark Visions remained in her very soul for as long as she can remember and she could not get them out. These were visions of her past and were also visions of how she became what she is now and they also remained in her very soul. Her Spirit has a terrible Darkness locked inside of her and it was the darkness that she sought to destroy. She sought to destroy the dark beasts that roamed this Earth and she wished for nothing more than to finish what she started.

But this was nothing that Delphine could not undo for it was her greatest achievement yet her biggest mistake that she had ever done. She may have sent the Grim Reaper back to Hell all those years ago, but he was never truly defeated by her hands. She waited and she longed for the day when she truly



defeats The Grim Reaper and find peace forevermore. A peace that she will always have for the rest of her life, but that time has not come and probably will not. She has lived in darkness for many ages and it was impossible to escape this great Darkness that was inside of her.

And so, Delphine Continued to run and she did not stop running and it never slowed her down as she pushed forward. She pushed on and moved forward and kept running for her Sword that she threw from a large distance and very far away. It was as far as she could ever make it for indeed it was a price that she would pay Ever dearly as she did otherwise.

## IV

And finally, Delphine found her Sword and it was right where she threw it from the large cliff that she was standing on. The Sword was very large and very long and it proved to be quite useful to her when it came to battling monsters. Then, she slowly walked towards her Large Blade and there was nothing that was in her way, except for the large forest that she was in. The forest had no leaves or grass that bloomed before her for everything was laid bare before her. For indeed, it was a time of terrible darkness and despair laid before the many people of this Earth.

Then, Delphine puts one of her hands onto the handle of her Greatsword and she began to feel the dark power of her blade come back into her. The power of The Crissagrim was known throughout the many lands of the Earth, it was known for being a Blade that only the most worthy of Warriors can wield. And then, she puts her other hand onto the handle of her Blade and all of the power of this blade came into her spirit and soul. This power came crawling into her skin and started entering her very mind as she continued to hold onto her Blade. Then, very slowly, Delphine began to pull up her Blade from the ground that was standing upon the ground and pierced it.

The Blade was coming out from the ground, very slowly and the ground began to shake as Delphine was continuing to pull it from the ground. And so, Delphine pulls the whole Sword out from the ground and she holds onto it for as long as she ever can. But suddenly, as she turns her whole body around, she could see that she was in a different location where she was standing. She was in the pits of Hell and all she could see was more Death from every corner that there ever was. The Demons were now lurking everywhere around her and then the Daedra came and they also stood before her.

Then, Lagertha came walking across the Demons and then with all of her Black Magic and the Power of

the Wolf, she punches the ground and it caused every last Demon to fly all over the place and they all die. Lagertha stares deep into her very soul and she walks slowly towards Delphine as she had her Sword raised up before her. And as she walks towards her, Lagertha's Wolf Eyes stares deep at Delphine's eyes as she now stands before her. Lagertha had more business to discuss as they were seen in the deep pits of Hell as the Demons watch them from a distance. The Skies were dark as Night and on the Sky was a large black hole of many corpses falling down into the Abyss.

"Delphine," She said.

"Lagertha." Delphine said.

"Delphine, the time of the Advent Shall soon be upon you and it shall never leave you and it shall be with you until the rest of your days," Lagertha said. "Is your heart prepared for such an event?"

"Surely, I don't know what you mean."

"Oh, but of course you know, Delphine. Don't you remember, I am the one that has told you such things. I deal only with truth and I have never been false with what there is to come. It is my curse to know the fates of those who witness this horrifying event that shall happen before you. This path that all of you walk will only lead to your gravest downfall and ending with

you knowing what you must do in order to fulfill your destiny."

"You never should have come here, Lagertha. I had everything under control. Ragnar and Iris are both under my protection. I will guard them with my life and I would rather die than harm any of them. What is it that you want more from me?"

"I am simply here to warn you, Delphine. I did not come here to let you answer some questions, but I am here to make sure that everything goes as I have foreseen. However, it's impossible to anticipate everything, I am not a Goddess and I don't know what raw power a God can truly wield. You also know this among all people that I cannot die, for I am immortal and I cannot be defeated so easily. I have lived as The Wolf Queen for many centuries and never have I ever rested for I sensed this Great Evil Before me.

"If I am to be defeated, then it must be by a Human and nothing more. I do not know the day nor the hour of which I will travel to the mountains and end my immortal life there. And when and until that day comes, I must see that the great Evil of this World has been vanquished and destroyed forever. You and I are the same, Delphine, we are immortal and we cannot die and yet, we cannot live until we have fulfilled that which we swore to do a thousand years ago.

"We have both been given a purpose in this life and remember that Fate has led the both of us together. Fate is indeed cruel, but in the end, we must see to it that the Darkness upon the World is destroyed and it is by our hand and our hand alone that we shall succeed. Never forget that."

Then, both Delphine and Lagertha began to stare at each other for a very long time before they could do anything else. Nothing else ever stood in their path as they were in the pits of Hell and the Demons watched ever onward. And suddenly, Delphine found herself in a river of Blood and Gore as she opened her eyes with her Sword in her hand. She opens her eyes and her whole body was covered in Blood including her Sword as she moved her head around. This vision that she had with The Wolf Queen is something that she will surely remember for the rest of her days.

## V

Then, Delphine slowly lifts herself up from the large river that she was laying upon and the stench of Blood was all that she could ever smell. She could only smell the blood that was splattered all over this Long River that laid heavily before her. Then, she looks up to the Morning Sky as the gray clouds were all over her as she was sitting in this bloody river. Her face and

her whole body was covered in nothing but Blood and Gore as she was breathing in and breathing out heavily. She then lifts her Sword up into the air and she looks down at the river and she closes her eyes and she started to get angry.

Delphine then, lets out a loud and angry Scream as she stares out into the forest before her as she was sitting there. Her Scream lifted up into the sky and the wind revolves heavily around her as she was staring at the sky and the forest. Then, she breathes in and out heavily, again as the gray clouds covered the morning Sun that was before her. And so, Delphine slowly walks out of the lake of Blood and Gore and she begins to walk back to where she, Ragnar and Iris rested themselves. She did not look behind herself and she never looked behind herself and she carried on towards the long Road.

The Road was dark and very long and rarely did anyone walk on this Road for it was lonely and many dark beasts roamed this Earth. And as she walked, she began to remember all of the events that occurred in her earlier life as The Ebony Warrior. While on her travels she came Across a young man that was probably about her age and she saved him from a Daedra that was about to put him out of his misery. Then, she decides to train him and teach him to survive in these Lands before she could go any further.

She trains him to be a Hunter and she lets him follow her to the very end and they walked the long Road before them.

His name was Simon and he once followed Delphine to the very end for there was nothing left for him in his place. In time, they both fought the Night Hordes and Delphine protected him from the dangers that were before them. This very vision tormented Delphine as she was continuing her way back towards Ragnar and Iris as the Morning went on and on. She remembered how it all happened between her and Simon as they were out there in this World defeating the darkness before them. The Vision that she had continued to haunt her for the rest of her days for this man was the only one that ever showed her Love.

The Vision continued before her and it did not leave her as she was still walking through this dark forest that was before her. Then, the Vision went forward in time and as they were resting before they could reach The Grim Reaper, Simon began to show that he loved Delphine. This very thing made her feel depressed and full of anguish, because she had told herself that she could never find love nor peace until she had finished what she started so long ago. This was not what she had in mind when she told him that she would protect him and defend him from the danger that was ahead for them. And so, without

hesitation and without question, she made in and made out with Simon as they were on this Long and Dark Journey.

Meanwhile, the Vision leaves her for a second and she began to realize that she began to have tears streaming down her eyes as this Vision about her past was before her. She did not realize that Simon would lay down his mortal life for her immortal one, she would live on and remember the days that she was with him. And later, as they continued their Journey towards the Grim Reaper, Delphine saves Simon from sudden death after he nearly dropped down to his death from a cliff. Then, he realizes that she keeps getting herself hurt and she is always spilling her Blood to save him from any danger. And as they continued and were on their way, they rested under the Morning Sun and in the forest and Simon slept but Delphine did not.

And so, the Vision leaves her again and this time, Delphine began to drop to the ground and she was kneeling down and she had both of her hands onto her face. And she began to remember everything that she has done for him and she began to cry to herself and feel twice as tormented as ever. And back in the Vision, she went towards Simon and she tells him to accept her and let herself become his. And so, he sees this sudden change of Heart in Delphine as she told him



this before him as he was asleep. And so, in that dark forest, in the midst of the Morning, they made love to each other and they made love to each other in that Forest.

But even she knew that she could never truly bear Children and even if she did, her son or her daughter would've known the truth about their mother being a Dark Warrior and lived only in the Darkness. The Vision leaves her again and now she understood what has happened all those years ago. Simon sacrificed himself to save Delphine from the hands of the Grim Reaper and she mourned his Death and she buried him on top of a Hill. And then the Vision leaves her once again and as she lifts her head up, she sees the Spirit of Simon before her but he appeared to be Real. She runs towards him to touch him but it didn't work for he vanished from her sight.

She looks at her hand and she sees a few sparkles on her hand which is covered in blood along with her whole face. She feels the cold breeze fall before her very arm as she stares at it for a very long time while sitting down. And so, she gets herself up from the ground and then she walks and she sees Lagertha standing before her once again. And then, Delphine walks towards her and she walks out of her way to stay out of her way as she continued her way

onto the long and Dark Road to rest herself with Ragnar and Iris.

## **CHAPTER 9: A WAY THROUGH**

The Queen of the Wolves has returned to Ragnar and Delphine so she can offer the both of them guidance. Ragnar seems confused at this and had no idea what was going on but Delphine couldn't get around to care about what Lagertha was telling her. Delphine felt like she was just questioning her about useless things that seemed unimportant to her liking. And so, she wandered off by herself and went out for a little walk in the forest when she started to receive visions of herself a Thousand Years Ago. These Visions continued to be with her and it was truly with her for

the rest of her days as she wandered the many lands of the Earth.

There is, indeed, a terrible darkness in you, Delphine, for there is nothing you can ever do to change it. Each day, I watch as you slowly get more powerful but also as you slowly succumb to the Darkness that you have sought to destroy. Your soft and warm body does not feel like any ordinary body for it is pale and white, yet dark as your Soul. Oh, the Horror that revolves heavily around you each day as you get even closer towards The Daedric Lords. Beware, lest you find yourself struggling to get out of that Darkness but finding nothing but empty lands that are as black as night. Farewell, for now.

## I

Delphine finds herself back to where Ragnar and Iris were resting themselves under the large tree that was behind them. Delphine then gets herself down to the ground where she would rest herself from all the walking and the wandering that she has done. She lays herself down on the grass and she uses her long Cape to cover herself from the Cold Wind revolving around her. She closes her eyes and she goes to sleep for a good minute before she could open her eyes again and say something else to herself. She gets herself up and

she sits up onto the grass and she looks down at herself and she spoke to herself, saying, "I'm finding it a bit uncomfortable to get a good rest wearing clothes."

And so, as it was now Late Morning, Delphine begins to take off her clothes that she was wearing and she lays it aside next to her. And again, she lays down onto the Grass and she uses her long Cape and she covers her bare body to get some sleep. And so, Delphine gets some more sleep as the Late Morning is upon them as they were resting themselves. Delphine suddenly began to feel comfortable than she's ever been and nothing else woke her up. They continued to rest themselves for the time being and nothing else interrupted them.

Suddenly, Ragnar was walking slowly towards Delphine to speak with her as she was asleep on the floor. As he was walking towards her, Delphine slowly began to open her eyes and see that it was Ragnar who was walking towards her. Delphine never took herself for a heavy sleeper, because she always saw nothing when she was asleep and nothing more. And then, Delphine slowly began to lift herself up from the ground and she was now sitting down on the grass. Ragnar had a very concerned look onto his face as he approached Delphine and he had the eyes of someone who has seen someone immortal.

"May I speak with you?" Ragnar asked her.

"Yes, sure." Delphine answered.

Then, Ragnar goes towards Delphine and he sits down next to her and she does not go anywhere else from there. Ragnar's eyes continued to look weary and he was very fearful of what was going to happen to both him and the rest of them. Delphine looks at Ragnar where he was sitting and she was beginning to worry greatly about him as he looked like this. Then, she looks away from him and she looks down at herself as she was realizing something that troubled Ragnar's soul. "You've seen her, didn't you?" She asked him.

"Yes... I have." Ragnar said.

"Lagertha. The Wolf Queen." Delphine said.

"I remember her. She took me in when I was just a Boy and she trained me to survive and taught me to kill. She made me who I am now and for many years, I have fought, hunted, survived, and killed and never knowing that she was always watching over me. I do not know why she comes back to me all of a sudden and why all of a sudden I begin to feel her presence wherever I go. It pleases me, and yet it sickens me to the very core that she has come to either haunt me or even give me some sort of advice that I thought I would never reach."

"I understand, Ragnar. For she was also with me."

"What makes you say that?"

"Ever since I have walked this Earth and ever since I have been on this long Journey fighting any Demon that stood before me, I have always felt her presence coming and I felt it reach me. I could not let it escape and it would never leave me for it was always in my presence and in my very Soul. My Soul trembles at her very sight and even seeing her in person brings a sudden end to your heart's beating. You see that she is very immortal and cannot be defeated by the likes of any mortal and she has lived on this Earth for many thousand years. She has lived in the Wilds and she has sought to seek those who lust for power their everlasting desire.

"The most that she has ever encountered were those who came out of curiosity's sake or even they were chosen for a lost cause. From what I understand, you must be the last one that she has come to and it must've revealed something in you, and she heard it."

## II

"Well, the last memory of her that I've ever had was when she believed that I was ready to go out into the World and hunt the Demons that roam this Earth.

I've learned from her how to live and how to hunt like her and learn of the many dangers that are in this world. She taught me many things that were either dangerous or even of the days of old, I've learned of many monsters besides Demons that are ripe for the Hunt. She also taught me of the many Gods and Kings that once ruled this Earth, like Odin All-Father and how he came to be one of the many greater Gods that mankind Once worshiped. I've learned of many Poems and many Tales written by many Poets, one of them went by the name William Shakespeare and the other went by the name Edgar Allen Poe."

"Lagertha taught you well, didn't she? She made sure that you must know every detail about the World before you and also let you Hunt on the day that you were ready. And also, she let you read many Shakespearean Tales and she made sure that you were taken care of."

Ragnar looks at Delphine for a few seconds before trying to say anything else to her so she could know and understand. "Yes," He said. "Something like that."

Then, Delphine moves and she gets even closer towards Ragnar as he was sitting down beside her on this morning. Ragnar looks and he stares at Delphine for a few seconds as she was staring at him, she was

wearing only her cape and nothing else. "Delphine."  
Ragnar said.

"Yes, what is it?" She asked.

"You have your own acquaintance. Why are you...  
not wearing anything right now?" He asked.

"Well... I find it too uncomfortable to get a good  
rest wearing clothes."

"Oh, I get it."

Then, Delphine gets in front of Ragnar and she  
begins to stare at him even longer, she felt a bit better  
with him being beside her. "It's more pleasant this  
way, isn't it?" Delphine asked.

"Yes. The shade is nice, But it must be too hot for  
you, as well." Ragnar answered.

"You don't have to worry about me. I am doing  
this for you because I really want to. But if it can make  
you feel any better than I suppose there is something  
you can do for me."

"Sure. It's only fair that only I can return the  
favor."

"Yes. I suppose a thank you and a reward from  
you should be given to me."

"For... what?"

"Me and Iris, we both saved you back there from  
dying. I still find it appealing that you had to fight over  
a hundred Demons in your path. We both prevented  
you from being near death and we are the ones who



offered you aid and comfort. So, for my reward," Delphine goes down towards Ragnar and she leans forward towards his face as he was sitting there.

"Your... Kiss."

"Are you... sure about this?" Ragnar asked.

"Come now, there's nobody else around." She answered.

"Well, there is Iris, in case if you're wandering." He said.

"I'm sure that she's asleep. From what I understand, she is a heavy sleeper. Now come on, do it for me."

"Fine. But make sure to keep this between us. It would be quite embarrassing if someone else found out about this."

"I'm sure we'll be fine." And so, Delphine stayed right in front of Ragnar as she waited for a Kiss from Ragnar as they sat down. Then, Ragnar slowly lets both of his hands touch Delphine's neck, she had a soft body and her skin was very smooth. Ragnar did not have any experience with Women and for a long time, he has only focused his life in hunting the Wild and killing Demons. He hardly talks to any women so he's pretty new to this whole relationship thing that everyone else has during this age in time.

And so, Ragnar pulls Delphine much closer to him and he also gets even closer to her face as the

morning kept going. Then, as Ragnar was slowly about to kiss her in her face, he began to hear a sound coming from his left side. It was Iris and she was calling his name to see where he was at and what he was doing all of this time. "Ragnar," Iris said. "Ragnar, where are you?"

Ragnar looks at his other direction and his cheeks began to glow red and his face started to feel very warm inside. Then, Delphine's hand gets onto Ragnar's face and her hand was warm, soft and smooth as she was touching him. She pulls his head as it touches his face and, without hesitation and without question, Ragnar kissed her on her cheek. And so, this was his first time that he has ever felt this satisfied with Delphine as he had his own way with her. Then, Ragnar's cheeks began to glow red again and he turns his face from her as she was staring at him.

"Well, I've done it." Ragnar said.

"Yes, a little bit." Delphine said.

"So, I guess this means that we are finally even." He said.

"I suppose so, depending which way you look at it." She said.

Then, Iris starts to walk towards both Ragnar and Delphine as the both of them were sitting down onto the grass. "Hey, Ragnar?" She called his name.

Ragnar looks to his left and he sees that Iris was trying to find him and wanting to speak to him about something. Then, Delphine slowly stands up from the ground and then she stares as Iris was still walking down the hill. "Ragnar, I think you should go to her." She said.

"You really think I should?" Ragnar asked.

"Of course," Delphine answered. "It would be quite embarrassing if she came right to this spot now and saw us."

### III

"What do you mean by that?" He asked.

"Well, you are fully dressed and I'm not wearing anything at all. I'm just using my cape to cover my bare body."

Then, Ragnar looks at Delphine and he stares at her for a long while before he could be doing anything else. "Well, not like I haven't seen everything under that Cape. Which means that I haven't had enough time to fully understand or even express myself to you." Ragnar said.

Before he could do anything or even say anything else, he sees that Delphine takes her cape off and when she sees Ragnar, she covers her front body with her cape. And when she was looking at him, she

wraps her hands around her front body and she covers her breasts. Delphine believed that Ragnar has seen enough from her body and she would be too embarrassed if she revealed everything to him. Then, her cheeks began to glow red and she began to feel much warmer on her face as she was feeling embarrassed.

"Ragnar, I don't think you should look at me right now. I need to get dressed and I've already shown you half of everything and half of all my weaknesses have been laid bare to you." She said.

"Fair enough." Ragnar said.

And so, Ragnar walks away from Delphine and he started to walk towards Iris as she was coming down the Hill. Ragnar left Delphine there so she could get dressed and be ready to be out onto the long Road once again. Then, he was standing before Iris as she was looking at him and staring at him before either one of them could do anything else. "Ragnar, do you know what's going on?" She asked.

"No, Why?" He asked.

"Well, when I was asleep, some strange things were happening and I seemed to have heard it and it was not any ordinary dream." Iris said.

"It was nothing important, there is nothing for you to worry about." Ragnar said.

"Oh, by the way, where's Delphine? And how come you're already awake more than I am?"

"Oh, she's just getting ready. We still have a long way ahead of us and there's still so much for us to do."

"You didn't answer my other question. How come you're already awake more than I am?"

"Well, I went towards Delphine and she and I had business to discuss."

"What sort of business?"

"That's none of your concern as of right now. Maybe if you keep this in secret than maybe everything will be just fine."

"And what kind of secret are you hiding from me?"

"Well," Before he could say anything else, Ragnar's cheeks began to glow red once again and he began to be filled with embarrassment. "After we discussed some business, she and I had a little affair with each other."

"An affair?"

"Maybe we did, maybe we did not. It felt pretty good in the end."

"Ragnar, is there a moral to this that I don't know about? I had strange things happening around me, you've been acting very gloomy a while ago, and now you're telling me that you and Delphine are interested in each other."

"Interested? Are you being serious right now?"

"Of course I'm serious. Ragnar, I now know what's going on. You're acting like you've seen everything, you cannot hide it from me. It is quite noticeable with that look on your face. You keep turning your face from me but I've already figured it out now. Are you a Stalker? Are you a Pervert, Ragnar?"

"No, not at all. Are you... really going to lecture me about that?"

Then, Ragnar and Iris began to stare at each other for a long while before they could do anything else, both of them looked at each other as if each one of them was hiding something. Ragnar was clearly hiding something away from Iris so she could not know about this nor tell anyone else around her. And so, Delphine walks towards the both of them and she was now fully dressed with Armor on and her cape and her weapons wrapped around her back. Delphine sees that both Ragnar and Iris were staring at each other very weirdly and she could not figure out why. "What's going on here?" She asked.

"Nothing at all." Ragnar answered.

"What are you two saying amongst yourselves?" Delphine asked again.

"Nothing important." Iris said.

Then, Delphine looks at the two of them and she stares at them for a long while before any of them could do anything else. "Well, shall we be on our way?" She asks them.

"Yes, let's get going." Ragnar said.

And so Ragnar, Iris, and Delphine left that hill together and they were walking onto the long Road that was before them once again. Roads go Ever, ever on, under cloud and under Star, yet feet that wondering have gone will turn at last to home afar. Eyes that fire and Sword has seen and Horror in the halls of stone, look at last at meadows green and trees and hills they long have known. And so, the three Hunters continued on and they continued to walk on the long and Dark Road that Lied heavily before them. Nothing would stand in their path for now, for now all they will ever see is more land and more trees before them.

Meanwhile, Ragnar began to see mountains before him and they were no ordinary mountains for they were not covered in snow. "Looks like that is where the other Demons are at." He said.

"It's going to be dark soon," Delphine said. "So we'd better get going."

Then, before they could go any further, Ragnar began to see something strange with Delphine's hand as they were walking. He sees a large scar on

Delphine's hand and it was from when she was wondering in the forest as he and Iris were asleep.

#### IV

"Delphine, Hold On a second." Ragnar said.

"Yes, what is it?" She asked.

"Let me see your hand." He said.

Then, Delphine lets her hand out towards Ragnar and he holds onto it and then he starts to look at it for a short while. Then, Ragnar pulls out a bandage from his pocket and he starts to wrap it around Delphine's hand that had the Scar on it. "I know that this isn't exactly ideal," he said. "but it's probably better than walking around with this big scar on your hand."

"Oh, Well I appreciate it. But, it's just a scratch, not anything that's big." She said.

"You might have a point there, but I find it a bit uncomfortable that your hand is going through a bit of a crisis." Ragnar said.

"You don't suffer from boredom, do you?" Delphine asked.

"I don't do well waiting around and doing nothing."

"Oh, you'll be just find, Ragnar."

And so, Ragnar finishes covering Delphine's hand with the bandage that he had with him and he



releases her hand. Then, they set off once again towards the mountains in the West and they kept going in the afternoon. Nothing else would be in their path for the next few miles that they were walking towards and on those miles, Ragnar began to see something troubling Delphine's soul. And as they were walking once more, they were beginning to delve deeper across the mountains before them. The mountains acted strange and it seems as if they were alive and were speaking to each other as the Three Hunters were passing through.

"Is something wrong, Delphine?" Iris asked.

"Nothing at all, Iris." Delphine answered.

"Are you quite certain that you're alright?"

Ragnar asked.

"I'm... just fine." Delphine said.

Now, both Ragnar and Iris were twice as concerned for Delphine as she was walking in front of them towards the mountains. And also, they were more than worried for what may seem to happen to her if they don't have a reasonable answer from Delphine.

"Hold On a second." Ragnar said.

Then, both Delphine and Iris were staring at Ragnar to see what he had to say before they could go any further. "It's true that both you and I can see in the dark and so can Iris, But isn't it a bad idea for you as

our leader to go through the Darkness by yourself?" Ragnar asked.

"What choice is there?" Delphine asked, "It's obvious that you are a Ranger, Iris is a Hunter and I am a Dark Warrior. And my purpose and my fate is my own, I won't leave you behind again, Ragnar. At any rate, if we don't do something soon, everything that we fought for and everything that we have done is for nothing. All of us have a role to play to save these people or avenge them from these Demons."

"Of course," Ragnar said. "But what if..."

Before Ragnar could say anything else to Delphine, she walks towards him and she walks so close to him that her face was much closer to his face. And then, she stares at him for a long while before they could go any further on this long and Dark Road. "You are worried... about me. Are you not?" She asked.

Ragnar could not so much as give Delphine a clear answer for, of course, he is truly worried about her but it was too hard for him to spit it out and say it. Then, Delphine speaks to him, saying, "Get over it. I told you before, I can look after myself. Do you understand? I don't need you or Iris to feel troubled for me.

"When it comes to Swordplay, I'm much more skilled and much more lucky than you. The rules have not changed, it is as it was before. Leave your personal

feelings out of the question. You do realize by now that I will make it through and it is my power that rescues me, and it will rescue me time and time again, until my work is done. By the way, I forgot to Thank You for that reward that you gave me, it felt really nice."

Then as Delphine turns around walks forward, Ragnar's face began to glow red again with embarrassment. He began to remember that Kiss that he gave to Delphine not too long ago and the thought began to come back to him and he couldn't get it out. "Hey, let's not waste anymore time." Delphine said.

And so Ragnar, Iris and Delphine continued onward and they continued to walk on the long path that was before them and they were walking towards a small village. This small village was filled with Hunters that appeared to be on the good side and not the bad side of things. "Hey, I see a Village up ahead." Iris said.

"Maybe we should go and stop for something to drink." Ragnar said.

"Does anyone of you have coins to spare?" Delphine asked.

"I have lots of bags of coins in my pocket." Ragnar answered.

"Then, I suppose that will have to do for now." She said.

And so, they both walked on that Long Road until they reach the village that seemed like a thousand feet ahead of them. The village was known as Windham and most of the Hunters were at the Inn of the Village and it was Evening. During the Evening, the Hunters would hang out in the Inn, drink Ale, and tell each other of the many Tales of many Hunters long ago. They would also tell of the many days of how the Demons were once sent back to Hell by none other than the Ebony Warrior. And so, as it was evening, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine walked forward and they went straight into the Inn.

## V

They went into the Inn and there were many Hunters feasting and drinking as the Sun was setting down. They were drinking Wine and Ale and they feasted with Deer and told many brooding Tales from the days of old. And so, the Three Warriors went into this Inn and they just walked through while everyone else stared deeply at them. These Hunters have never met nor have ever seen Ragnar, Iris nor Delphine as they were standing there staring at the three of them. The three Warriors were simply minding their own business and were just coming in for some Ale and for a Drink.

And so, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine went up to the counter and they waited on the counter for the Innkeeper to see what they would like to order. "Is there something that you need?" The Innkeeper asked.

"Ale for three." Delphine answered.

"Very well, I would like to see some coin from you." The Innkeeper said.

As they waited for their Ale to be brought to them, there were many Hunters staring at the three of them. These Hunters wore mostly black Leather Armor and they all had large beards and very long hair as they were in here. They assumed that one of the Three looked very familiar to them as they were standing there gazing at the Three Warriors. The Hunters stared mostly at Delphine, she had the strongest Armor amongst all of them and she carried a powerful two-edged Sword. Then, one of them walked slowly towards Ragnar, Iris and Delphine as they were still waiting for their Ale to be given to them.

The Hunter's name is Uhtred and he began to slowly walk towards Ragnar, Iris and Delphine between the counter. He had something to say to the three of them for he believed that there was something important about one of them. "Are you Three part of the Raiders?" Uhtred asked, "Are you three Mercenaries?"

Then Ragnar, Iris and Delphine began to look at each other for a long while before deciding what to say or do. "We're not part of any Raiders." Delphine said.

"We most likely Hunt for a living." Iris said.

"I was once a Mercenary. A lifetime ago." Ragnar said.

Then, Uhtred began to look at all three of them and he began to stare directly at them for a short while before he could do something. "You all seem very capable and you all look the part. You all have eyes of those who have fought many Demons. You cannot hide away from that very fact that you managed to make it out alive."

"What do you want from us?" Delphine asked, "Who are you, and why are you speaking with us?"

"My name is Uhtred," he answered. "I am a Hunter and I hunt the living creatures that roam the Wild Lands. I also have hunted a few Demons and I managed to make it out alive. I'm speaking with you, because there are rumors that Three Warriors have hunted many Demons and have defeated many of the Daedra that ruled the Kingdoms of the Earth. They say that they've never seen a Woman carry a large Sword before and they never saw one such as yourself walk away from them alive."

"I only do what must be done, because there is no other way," she said. "It has never been my desire

to walk away from my enemies. I could care less about what happens to them after thinking it would be a good idea for them to attack me."

"Ale for three!" The Innkeeper Shouted.

And then Ragnar takes one of the Ale given to the three of them and he starts to drink from it and then, Iris also starts to drink one of the Ale. Suddenly, as Delphine turns her head and sees that Ale was given to her, Uhtred looks at her Chest and sees a large symbol on the Chest-plate of her Armor. This Symbol was something that the people of the Earth recognized for many Centuries to come, it was the Symbol of the Ebony Warrior.

"Hey. What's that on your Chest?" Uhtred asked.

"What are you talking about?" Delphine asked.

"That Symbol. My people recognize it. They recognize all of it." He said.

Then, he starts to stare at the Symbol that was on Delphine's Chest as everyone else was staring directly at Delphine. "Is there a problem?" She asked.

"No," Uthred said. "It cannot be. I-It's you... you're the one that defeated The Grim Reaper all of those years, ago. You're the one that drove the Demons away those many centuries ago. You... you are none other than The Ebony Warrior!"

And so, the other Hunters that were staring at Delphine began to be full of shock and despair that

The Ebony Warrior was before them all. And then they all, one by one, kneeled down before Delphine and their heads were bowed down to her. They all remembered and have heard of the Tale boldly told of the one who sent the Grim Reaper back to Hell. Then, Delphine walks before Uhtred and she looks down upon him and she speaks with him, saying, "Why are you doing this? I am not worthy to be praised.

"I'm a Warrior. Not some God to be praised in a Holy Temple."

"But thanks to the Gods and to you, we did not need to fight anymore Demons that roam this Earth." Uhtred said.

"I don't believe in the existence of other Gods," Delphine said. "Man is the master of his own fate, not the Gods. The Gods are Man's creation, to give answers that they are too afraid to give themselves. There is only one God and above all, there is no other. It is what is in Men's Hearts what he cares about. He loves you as he loves me. We have only to ask for forgiveness deep within ourselves and be welcomed back."

Then, Uhtred thought of it for a moment and he looked at Delphine and he spoke to her again, saying, "Tell us, Ebony Warrior. What is the Psalm that you spoke before you entered the Highest Peak in all the Realms?"



Then, Delphine answered him, saying, "The Lord is my Shepard; I shall not want. He makes me to lie down in green pastures; He leads me besides the still waters. He restores my soul; he leads me in the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. Yea, though I walk through the Valley of The Shadow of Death, I will fear no evil; for you are with me; your rod and your staff, they comfort me. You prepare a table before me in the presence of my enemies; you anoint my head with oil; my cup runs over. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life; and I will dwell in the house of the Lord forever."

And so, Uhtred and the other Hunters stared at her and were full of shock, surprise, and despair at her words. "My God, it truly is you. Please, tell us your name." He said.

"I am Delphine. Delphine of Moria." She said.

Then, Uhtred began to have ale with the Three Warriors and Delphine also began to have Ale with both Ragnar and Iris.

## **CHAPTER 10: THE DEVIL'S HOUNDS**

And so, the Hunters remember Delphine and they know that she is truly the Ebony Warrior that they have heard so much about. Her name was described and mentioned in Tales and in Song as the one who drove the Demons away. There is only one true God and all usurpers must be cast aside at the sound of that wonderful name. The many sacrifices that Delphine has made to reach and defeat The Grim Reaper were not at all in vain. And though she travels with Ragnar and Iris to defeat the many Demons before her, she would need to put aside much more than she once did.

Delphine has come a long way than she once did, she was once alone except with that man who truly cared for her and gave up his mortal life to preserve her immortal one against the Grim Reaper. But that was in an age long past from here, Delphine knows how it is like to suffer and how it is like to experience pain. And now, there are many others, such as Uhtred, who has heard of the deeds of Delphine and wish to fight back alongside with her. There was never a single moment or time when she backed away and gave in to her enemies in a single instinct. The Hunters of this tavern kneel down before Delphine for They knew that she has come, once again, to save them from Darkness. Farewell, for now.

# I

Delphine began to drink the ale that was given to her and she was with Ragnar and Iris along with Uhtred being with them. The Ale was pure and smoothly brewed with Cranberries and it had a satisfying aftertaste. The Hunters then, began to speak amongst themselves that Delphine has come and has return to finish what she started. And then, Uhtred went before Delphine and he had something else to say and ask her, for there was so much that he needed to know. "So, Delphine?" He asked.

"Yes, what is it?" She asked.

"Who are you traveling with? What is there names?" Uhtred asked.

"Well, I'm traveling with a Ranger and a Hunter. His name is Ragnar," she points at Ragnar. "And her name is Iris," she points at Iris.

"Is there any place that you sleep? Do you have a place to live?"

"Not at all. I can't even remember the last time I ever slept anywhere. All that ever mattered to me is what I must do to survive in this Age and I cannot rest until the day comes when I defeat my greatest Enemy."

"How Long will that take for you to do that?"

"...I do not know. But I do know that if I don't defeat and if I sit back and watch as he puts anymore

lives at risk and if I fail in trying to reach him, then I am bound for Hell. It is a price that I shall pay, dearly."

"So, where are you headed towards this time?"

"We are headed towards the West and we are searching for the Daedric Leader that lives in that Kingdom."

"You are going towards the Mountains? You will never make it there, there are Demons abroad everywhere you go when you are near those Mountains."

"You must not worry about me. I've been doing this for a very long time, I have lived almost my entire life killing Demons and slaying many beasts that stand in my way. Nothing has changed and nothing i can't handle."

"Then, we are coming with you."

After he said this, Delphine's eyes began to grow and she began to look and stare directly at him in the eye. She thought that he was being nuts when he told her this, there was no way that he would come with her, she wondered. "If you come with me, you will die." She said.

"We are not afraid of death, Ebony Warrior. We have fought our enemies for almost our entire lives. If we back out now, it would be our gravest downfall." Uhtred said.

"All well and good," Delphine said. "But you must know and you must keep it to yourselves wherever you must go. And when someone asks you why you think that was a good idea, you tell them that it is only way of surviving these Demons."

"So what will it cost to follow a Warrior such as yourself?" He asked.

"If anyone comes to me and does not know the danger and the path laid ahead before them before they go out and kill their enemies, he cannot follow me. And whoever does not bear his Sword and come after me cannot be my follower. For which of you sees a dark vision laid before you, yet you simply say to yourself 'This is all false and nothing will come for me that easily. It is all just a myth that brings upon imaginary things that shall never happen to me.' The day will come when you are of old age and yet the vision that you had comes back to you and it never leaves you no matter how hard you try.

"And suddenly, hundreds of lost souls come out from the Abyss and try to take you and drag you down to the pits of Hell where you will be welcomed by millions of those fiends that you sought to destroy. Satan will come out of nowhere and he summons you with him and your Soul is Damned for all eternity! So likewise, whoever of you does not forsake all that he

has and if you wish to die for nothing that matters in your life cannot be my follower."

And so all of the Hunters, including Ragnar and Iris stared at Delphine for a long while before they could say or do anything else. They were pleased and yet, they were shocked at the words that Delphine spoke with them as they were in this Tavern.

## II

"So, what will you have us do?" Uhtred asked.

"You are needed in this City and if you are willing, you must continue to fight back against the Demons," Delphine answered. "I cannot decide your fate, that is only for you to decide. Only you can see what else will lie ahead before you with each Demon you kill and with each Road you cross to get to your destination. I cannot Answer it for you and I cannot point to the direction of where you must go if you wish to fulfill that which you swore to yourself. I must go now, I cannot hold back and I can't stay here any longer."

"Will we meet again?" He asked.

"Of course we will," she answered. "Your people have never forgotten about me, they will still mention me and how I have done that which I have done all those years ago. But I will not be gone and I cannot die

here, not until I have finished what I've started, a long time ago."

"Very well. Your strength and Honor are apparent to all those whose eyes are worthy to be seen and whose ears are worthy to be heard. We are all in your debt."

"Of course. I'll be on my way now. Fight on against the Demons and fight with Honor."

"We will."

"Ragnar. Iris. We are leaving now."

And so Ragnar, Iris and Delphine went their way and they were leaving the Tavern that was behind them during this evening. As they were leaving, all of those Hunters watches them as they leave this village that they were just passing through. There is now light for these Hunters and the future that they are seeing now that the Ebony Warrior has returned to them. They now see that they have not been abandoned nor cast out in vain as they chose this life that they lived. They live to drive the Demons and the Creatures of the Night back to whence they came during this Dark Age.

And so, continuing where they left off on the long and Dark Road Ragnar, Iris and Delphine Journeyed to the western mountains to kill the Demonic Leader that lives there. A new leader of the Demonic forces of the West came lurking from the shadows, the Demons called him, Mozag. He was ruthless, cunning and very

powerful and he has led them for many decades in the Western Mountains. Ragnar, Iris and Delphine walked out from the village and they continued West to search for Mozag and possibly defeat him. According to Ragnar, he might be the one who will tell them where Sheogorath, the Daedric Lord might be.

Meanwhile, they come across a Demon starrng deep into the Village but it was just one and not too many. Ragnar tells Iris and Delphine to wait where they were standing and then he sneaks behind the Demon that was before them. He then pulls out his Greatsword and he stabs the Demon in the back without that Demon noticing him. Then, the Demon turns around and he looks at him, "Why, you..."the Demon said. But before he could say or do anything else, Ragnar takes him by the throat and he begins to choke him.

"Where are the rest of your kind lurking?" He asked the beast, "Tell me or you will die."

"They... are lurking behind those Mountains over there! He told me to stay and watch for any trespassers, that's all I know!" The Demon said.

"I see. Don't move from here." Ragnar said.

"Oh, give me a break!" The Demon Shouted, "Going to that mountain is Suicide. You will be killed like all the rest of those Mortals!"



"I have killed many that stood in my way, this is nothing new and nothing has changed. Nothing I can't handle."

"My death will not lead you to our leader. I will be avenged sevenfold by my Master! You will all die and your soul will be fed to our Lord! DEATH COMES FOR YOU..."

And before the Demon could say or do anything else, Ragnar uses his Greatsword and he stabs the Demon through his chin up to the top of his Skull. And so, that Demon died and Ragnar dropped him down to the ground where his Blood and Gore stained the floor. Then, Ragnar returns to Iris and Delphine and they walked towards the mountains that the Demons mentioned before. Then, Ragnar sees another Demon and he pulls out his Bow and an Arrow and he aims and shoots at the Demon and the arrow landed on it's face and the Demon falls and dies. And so Ragnar, Iris and Delphine kept walking towards the mountains and they stopped at nothing to reach them.

Then, they see a group of Demons discussing to themselves as the three Hunters continued to walk ever onward towards them. "Indeed, I'll say that they are pretty good and very strong!" The Demon shouted, "But why would they come out to US?! I've never seen a bigger fool then those three. They say that they killed

hundreds of us and more and more keep coming and they still survive."

Then, Delphine walks next to Ragnar and she looks at the Demons as they were still walking towards them. "They know nothing. They are very fragile before my power." She said.

"We must be in great caution," Ragnar said. "For even in Death, the Demons are dangerous."

"I see Demons, of course," Iris said. "But there are only three of them. What's going on?"

"It's a Trap. Stay behind me, who knows what they will do once we reach them." Delphine said.

And so, they continued to follow the path that led towards the mountains and they continued onto the road that led them there. The path led deeper into the night and no one seem to be here as Ragnar, Iris and Delphine were walking here.

### III

And then a moment later, they began to hear footsteps before them and the sound crept deep into their ears. "Wait. Do you hear that?" Ragnar asked.

"Uh...Footsteps?" Iris asked.

Then, they looked everywhere and out from the shadows came a Demon and many others who were with him and they pointed their weapons at them. The

Demon that was leading them was called Kemada and he led a dozen of the Demons that followed him into battle. And Kemada looked at the three Warriors and he spoke to them, saying, "Well, what have we here. A Ranger, A Skillful Hunter, and the one they call the Ebony Warrior. What brings you three in this ungodly hour?"

"Do not assume that we are like any ordinary Demons to be slaughtered in Cold Blood like the rest of those who roam this Earth. No matter how strong an enemy may be, they are but a far cry from being an invincible Mortal."

Then, the dozen of Demons that were with Kemada Shouted at Ragnar, Iris and Delphine, saying, "You shall all pay for your crimes against us! I will make you have a taste of your own blood! You are not leaving here alive!"

Then, Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and she points it at the Demons that were standing with Kemada and before them. And she spoke with them, saying, "Enough of this mindless chattering and fight us! Even a thousand of you cowards can never bring me down. I have a Sword here that can kill a Dragon!"

"Then, we shall show you all who stand here and defy us!" Kemada Shouted, "Behold! The technique that was passed down by the great and mighty Ares of

the Underworld! Feel and tremble now before the power of Darkness!"

Then, a few of the Demons went over towards Ragnar, Iris and Delphine to Kill them where they were standing. Then, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he was ready to kill the Demons that were before him during this night. Iris pulls out her Bow and an Arrow and she was also ready for a battle against the Demons before her. And finally, Delphine held onto the Crissagrim and with just one hand, she pointed the Sword against the Demons. "No further," she said. "You shall have neither the rest of these Lands, nor me!"

But the Demons did not listen to a single word that Delphine was saying before them as they continued to charge towards them. Then, Ragnar uses his Greatsword and he charges towards the Demons and he swings his Greatsword and he begins to kill the Demons. He dodges and he blocks every single one of the attacks that the Demons were handing to him as he defended himself. Then, he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on.

Then, Iris uses her Bow and Arrow and she charges towards the Demons and she aims and shoots

at the Demons. She also dodges and blocks every single one of the attacks that the Demons were handing to her as she defended herself. She aims and shoots at them and the arrows land on their faces, their chests, and their throats and they began to fall down. Again, lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And then, Iris continued her way against the Demons and nothing else would ever stand in her way as she charged towards them.

And finally, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to kill all of those Demons that she sees before her. None of them could even lay a single attack or even defend themselves for She was too strong against them. She cuts off their heads, she slices them in half and she cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners. Delphine makes sure that not a single one of them was left standing and nothing ever held her back as she brutally and Violently kills all of those Demons. And so, Delphine Continued her way against the Demons and nothing else would ever stand in her way as she continued killing them.

Then Ragnar, Iris and Delphine finished their battle against the Demons and they walk towards Kemada and Ragnar spoke with him, saying, "You're pretty lousy for someone who claims to be a Master's right hand."

"You! When did you...?!" Kemada Shouted shockingly.

Then, the three Warriors walk closely towards Kemada as he walks backwards towards them during this time. "What... what are you? What in the Hell are you?!" He asked confused, "Is that the way you look when you are about to die?!"

"Are you really in such a big hurry when you are about to die?" Delphine asked.

Then, Kemada looks behind them to the rest of the Demons that were with him as they were walking on this Mountain. "Kill then!" He Shouted, "Show them the power that we all wield against our enemies!"

Then, the rest of the Demons charged before Ragnar, Iris and Delphine and they were all ready to kill them. Then, they all held onto their weapons and they began to charge quickly towards them as the Demons were charging towards them. Then, Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he begins to kill all of the Demons that were before him on this Night. Once again, the Moon began to be covered in Blood and the dark and bleak Sky was above them all. Ragnar dodges and blocks each and every single one of their attacks that they were throwing at him as he defended himself.

Then, he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners.

## IV

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Ragnar Continued his way towards the Demons and nothing else would ever stand in his way as he continued killing them. Then, Iris pulls out her Sword and she charges towards the Demons and she also began to kill all of the Demons that were before her. Iris also dodges and blocks each and every single one of the attacks that the Demons were throwing at her. Then, she cuts off their heads, she stabs them in their throats, and she slices them on their chests all in brutal and violent manners.

Again, the blood and gore of the Demons began to stain the hard, solid ground that they were standing on as they fought each other. And so, Iris continues her way against the Demons and nothing else would ever stand in her way as she continued killing Demons. And finally, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to kill every single one of the Demons that stood before her. Delphine slices and slashes every last one of them and they could not so easily defend

themselves from the dark power that she wielded. She cuts off their heads, she slices them in half and she cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners.

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. After that, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine finish their battle against the Demons and they began to walk again towards Kemada. "Looks like you are the only one left," Ragnar said. "Now what will you do?"

Ragnar sees Kemada wearing a necklace that looks like the shape of a crescent Moon if a mind's eye has ever seen it. He then, goes towards the Demon and he rips it off of him and he takes it for his own and he kept it with him. "It doesn't suit you. It's mine now and none other." He said.

Then, Kemada started to be terrified and he trembled before Ragnar, Iris and Delphine and both of his knees were resting onto the ground. "Spare me! Spare my life! If you kill me, then Mozag... Mozag will tear you to pieces!" He Shouted.

Then, Delphine stared at Kemada for a short while and then she walks slowly towards him and she speaks with him, saying, "So, this Mozag that you speak of is the reason behind these attacks on this Village?"



"He will tear you all to shreds!" Kemada said fearfully, "He will feed your flesh to the birds of the air and the beasts of the field!"

"You just want those to be your last words?" Ragnar asked him.

Then, Ragnar uses his Greatsword and he slices Kemada onto his chest and he stabs him in his stomach and he falls back. Then, he looks up towards Ragnar and then he pukes out lots of Blood and his own life began to be fading away. "That... that didn't even hurt!" He Shouted.

Then, Ragnar slices Kemada's Chest again and he gets out of the way as more blood began to leave the Demon. And then, Delphine uses her Greatsword and she slices The Demon in half and then he fell to the ground and was now dead. Then, Delphine puts her Sword back to her Sheathe and Ragnar puts his Sword back to his Sheathe as they look at the Demons that were now dead. Then, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine left that spot and they went on and they continued West to search for Mozag. Once more, the Road was a long and Dark Road that went Ever on and on and this time, it led to the leader of the Demons of the West.

"There's so much more for all of us to do," Iris said. "It is as if with every new Demon that we kill, it seems that more and more keep coming and it seems like there is no end to this Madness."

"That doesn't mean we just give up now, does it?" Delphine asked, "I have seen much worse and I've killed many monsters that were before me. This is nothing different and nothing new, either."

"We must not rely on our past transgressions, for now," Ragnar said. "Those Hunters that we met in that Tavern, they are truly needed in their Village more than we are. Until this Mozag is defeated and until we find and defeat the Daedric Lords, I fear that their freedom is in delay because of them, now let's keep going."

And so, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine kept walking towards the mountains and they continued onto the long Road that was before them. As it was Nighttime, the Blood Moon was out and the air was very cold and it breezes heavily around them as they were still walking. And as they were walking, they began to see a dead-end before them and they stopped walking as they gazed their eyes upon it. "A dead-end," Delphine said. "We'll just have to climb over it."

Then, Delphine walks forward beside them and Ragnar also began to walk with her towards the mountainside. "W-Wait a minute! You're kidding right?" Iris asked.

Then, she had no other choice, but to climb the mountain with them for there was no mountain path nor other way. And so, they climbed up to the

mountaintop, and as they climbed, a stone next to Iris fell down and it was a very long way down. They all climbed up at what seemed like a hundred feet and falling down meant instant death for you. So, they did not bother looking down but they kept gazing up to the mountaintop to reach all the way up there. They make it up to the high ground and Delphine got herself up to the top first and Ragnar and Iris were still climbing.

## V

And so, Ragnar gets himself up to the high ground as well and Ragnar looks down to get Iris up towards them. And so, Ragnar reaches his hand toward Iris as she was climbing up towards them and Iris catches a hold of his Hand. And so, he pulls her up to the mountaintop and he waits for her to catch her breath after all of that climbing. "Sorry I'm late," Iris said. "Well, shall we go?"

"Of course." Ragnar said.

And so, they kept walking on this long and Dark Road that was before them and they continued their way towards the Mountains. Meanwhile, another group of Demons came walking towards them and there were about twenty-four of them. The Demons pulled out their Swords and Axes and they were all

ready for another battle against the Three Warriors. The leader of those Demons came walking towards them and he was bloodthirsty against them for he knew what they did. Word spread like mage-Fire about Ragnar, Iris and Delphine and what they did against the Demons and the Demons also knew about them.

“Mozag has ordered us to kill you on sight!” The Demon shouted, “So, you must be the ones who have been killing our kind one by one. Indeed, we have heard all about you three. But even if you did that, you will not live to see the sun rise or set. We will crush you all like insects and send you all to burn in Hell!”

And so, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he holds onto it and he was ready for yet another Battle against the Demons. Then, Iris pulls out her Bow and an Arrow and she was also ready for yet another battle against those Demons. And finally, Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and she points it at them and she kept her distance against them. Then, the Demons started to charge quickly towards them and they were bloodthirsty against them as they are ready for this battle. And then, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine also charge quickly towards the Demons and yet another Battle begins.

Ragnar charges towards them and he swings his Greatsword and he begins to kill every last one of

them that were before him. He dodges and blocks each and every single one of their attacks that they threw against him as he battled them. Then he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Ragnar Continued on against the Demons and nothing else held him back as he charged quickly towards them.

Iris also charges against the Demons and she uses her Bow and Arrows and she aims and shoots at every Demon that she sees. She also dodges and blocks each and every single one of their attacks that they threw against her as she battled them. Then, as she was shooting them with her Bow, the Arrows landed onto their heads, their Chests, and their throats. And as they fell to the ground, their Blood began to leave their bodies and they began to stain the solid ground with their blood. And also, Iris also continued on against the Demons and nothing else held her back as she charged quickly towards them.

And finally, Delphine charges quickly towards the Demons and she swings her Greatsword and she began to kill every single one of them brutally and Violently. The Demons could not block or even dodge her attacks that she threw at them and she was very

skillful when it came to Battles. She cuts off their heads, she cleaves them open and she slices them in half all in brutal and violent manners. Again, Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Delphine continues on against the Demons and nothing held her back as she charged quickly towards them.

And as Ragnar and Delphine were walking towards the leader of these Demons that were now dead, Iris went over and she takes the Arrows that the Demons had and what she had. The Demonic Leader sees that his band of Demons were all dead by the three Hunters that came here. Then, like a Coward that gave in very easily, he began to run away from Ragnar and Delphine as they were getting close towards him. Then, Delphine pulls out her Bow and an Arrow and she aims and shoots at the Demonic Leader on his leg. The Arrow went through his leg and he now began to hop away as lots of his own Blood began to leave him.

Then, Delphine lands another Black Arrow onto the Demonic Leader and it landed onto his back and then he fell to the ground and he could not get up. Then, Delphine walks towards the Demonic Leader and she pulls out the Arrows that were inflicted upon his body. "Running away from your Enemies? Some noble Leader you are." Delphine said.

“What are you?” He asked her. “What the Hell are you?!”

“Come on,” She said. “Get up. Attack me. You only suffered your back and your leg. Bring your Demons back to life. Heal your broken body and stand! The night is still so young.”

“Stay away. Stay away from me!” The Demon Shouted.

Then, Delphine stared with her eyes open and wide at the Demon and she stares at him for a long while. “So, I see what you really are,” She said. “You’re Pathetic! All I see before me is a Weakling. A Coward!”

“Shut Up,” He Shouted. “You’re nothing but a Hell-bound Warrior. A dog whose Name is casted out from this land and whose soul is Damned for all eternity. The Devil will not fail to drag you back to Hell!”

Before he could say anything else that insulted her, Delphine raises her Greatsword and she slices the Demon in half and now he was dead. Then, Iris walks towards her and Ragnar and Delphine puts her Sword back to her Sheathe. And so Ragnar, Iris and Delphine were off again and they continued onward on the long and Dark Road that was before them. The Night was still so young and the Blood Moon was still out in the dark Sky that covered the land. They were off to face

their great enemy and they were off to face the one that ruled the Western Mountains.



## CHAPTER 11: EDGE OF NIGHT

The Western Mountains, the mountains that are plagued with Demons wherever you go and wherever you stand. They will come to you at a time where you will not expect nor will you wish to see it through as they come. They will feed on you, they will feed your soul to their Lord, Satan, and their Master that rules these Mountains. There will be no escape for you when these Demons take a Hold of you when they get their hands on you. When you're on these mountains, there will be only death and despair for even the simplest of wanderers.

But that time has come to an end, since Ragnar, Iris and Delphine defeats the vast majority of the Demons that roamed here. But the Night was still so young and the Blood Moon continued to shine in the night sky that was before them. The road to the Center of the Western Mountains was very long and it seemed to have no end. But that could not stop the Three Warriors as they draw even closer to fight their master that they serve. Perhaps this Master of the Demons of the Western Mountains can lead them to the location of the Daedric Lords. Farewell, for now.

Ragnar, Iris and Delphine continue where they left off on the long and Dark Road that was before them and they stopped at nothing. They were off to search for Mozag, the leader of the Demons of the Western Valley and the last one who took control of the Kingdoms of the Earth. The Three Warriors travel on into the night in order to crush the Demonic army that is terrorizing the Western Lands and it's people. It is Nighttime and The Blood Moon was still hovering above the sky and that meant there were more Demons lurking around. While they were walking, Iris began to see a bunch of skulls and dead bodies lying down on the ground and she began to feel terrified.

"Was it always like this?" Iris asked.

"The Demons," Delphine said. "This must all be their doing."

"It's nothing more than a wasteland," Iris said. "Their hearts are full of hatred, they desire to rule over us and they wish to summon Satan from the depths of Hell."

"Who knows what they will do once Satan is summoned from his Dark Throne," Ragnar said. "Only three of us against so many. We must be going. It seems like we are so close to him, Mozag."

"Very well, there was nothing here anyway," Delphine said. "Let's move on."

And so Ragnar, Iris and Delphine moves on and they continued to walk and venture towards the Western Mountains. As they began to draw even closer, the air began to feel cold around them and they started to freeze. The air was cold, the Moon was full and covered in blood, and the Stars shown in the night sky as they continued walking towards the mountains. The ground was hard and full of solid rock and there were many stones that covered the ground. They walked for a very long time and they could not stop for they were very close towards their enemies.

But suddenly, they found another dead end that seemed to block their path that they had to walk in order to reach them. And then, a whole group of Demons surrounded them and Mozag walked before them and spoke with them, saying, "Finally, after long nights of endless searching, we have found the ones that they call a Ranger, a female Hunter, and the one they call The Ebony Warrior. You pieces of Filth! You have slaughtered many of my kindred. I want you all to know very well the pain that I feel!"

Then, Mozag pulls out his Daedric Greatsword and stabs it to the ground and the ground shatters and the Earth shakes. "I know how you feel," he said. "I know how much it hurts. That's why it makes me feel so much better!"

Then, Mozag laughs and Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he tries to charge against him but he couldn't because Mozag warned him about it. "Do not move!" Mozag Shouted, "One move and your friends are dead!"

Then, Ragnar looks at Mozag and he stares at him for a long while in fury and anger against him and the Demons. "You can not do anything except stand there and wail!"

"Stop this, you beast!" Ragnar Shouted.

"Do you not care if that little girl of yours that you protect will live or die?" Mozag asked.

"I will never run away from my enemies!" Ragnar Shouted, "I Kill those that stand against me! If you kill this girl then I will visit it back on you a thousand times over!"

Then, all of the Demons stared at Ragnar in confusion for they believed that he would not at all win against them. Then Iris looks at Ragnar and she stares at him for a long while for even she knew that he will never leave her to die. "Don't you have anyone close to you?" Mozag asked, "If you did, then I would see they wound up the same way."

"Those who do evil against me and my people do not belong in this world!" Ragnar said, "Too many have suffered and died because of you. You Demons,

who have no regard for others... you don't deserve to live!"

"How dare you say that after you go out and kill my kindred and my Armies!" Mozag Shouted, "You will not leave this place alive. You will soon know how great and mighty the Demonic Armies can be!"

Then, Mozag uses his Greatsword and he stabs it onto the ground a second time and the mountains and the ground exploded and the ground began to shatter. And then, the ground divided in two and it caused Ragnar to be separated from Iris and Delphine as the ground became divided.

## II

Then, Lava began to come out from the mountains and it filled the ground below them and it filled the lowest gap. "Iris!" Delphine shouted, "Grab onto me! Grab on and do not let go!"

Then, Iris gets behind Delphine and she holds onto her as tight as she can ever hold onto anyone and she waited for Delphine to say something. "Delphine, what are we doing?" Iris asked.

"We are going to get towards Ragnar," Delphine Answered. "Now, Hold On!"

And so, Iris held onto Delphine and she did exactly as she was told and she waited for Delphine to

do something. And then, with Super Sonic Speed, Delphine ran and jumped towards the gap to reach Ragnar as Iris was still holding onto her. Delphine could run as fast as the speed of sun if she ever felt like doing so when it especially came to moments like this. And so, Ragnar looks behind him and it was Iris and Delphine that were now with him during this time. And so, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine found themselves before Mozag and the Demons as they stared at each other.

"This is it, you three!" Mozag Shouted. "Give up while you still can or else every last one of you shall die, I promise you. So, the Humans call you the Ranger, the female Hunter, and the Ebony Warrior, from what I understand. They call you the Killer of Demons and they say you have experience with killing every last one of us.

"That's pretty interesting for someone of your brute strength. But having power is one thing and knowing how to use it is another. There are only three of you but there are a Hundred of us! There's no way you can so easily escape or even make it out of here alive. So, now you are here as good and as sacrifice for Satan, Lord of the Earth and king of the World!

"You will surrender now to us or you all shall die!"

Ragnar, Iris and Delphine stared at Mozag for a long while before they could say or do anything else on this Mountain. And then, Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and she holds onto it for a long while and she points it at the Demons. Then, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he also holds onto it and he points it at the Demons. and finally, Iris pulls out her Bow and an Arrow and she holds onto them and she stares at the Demons and she keeps her distance. And so, they began to walk towards the Demons and also Mozag as they were now ready for a Battle.

"DESTROY THEM! NOW!!" Mozag Shouted.

And then, all of the Demons that were with Mozag began to charge quickly towards Ragnar, Iris and Delphine. Then, they also began to charge quickly towards the Demons as the Night was still so young and dark. Ragnar swings his Greatsword and he begins to kill every last one of those Demons that were charging after him. Then, he blocks and dodges each and every single one of their attacks that they threw against him as the long Night continued. Then, he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners.

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Ragnar continues onward against the Demons and nothing else ever held him

back as he charged quickly towards them. Then, Iris uses her Bow and Arrow and she also begins to kill every single one of the Demons that were charging after her. Then, she also begins to block and dodge each and every single one of their attacks that they threw against her. Then, she aims and shoots at the Demons and the Arrows landed onto their Heads, their throats, and their chests.

As the Demons fell to the ground after getting shot, their Blood began to leave them and it ended up onto the ground. And so, Iris continues onward against the Demons and nothing else ever held her back as she charged quickly towards them. And finally, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to kill every last one of those Demons that stood before her. The Demons could not even block or even dodge the attacks that Delphine gave to every last one of them. Then, she cuts off their heads, she slices them in half and she cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners.

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Delphine Continued onward against the Demons and nothing else ever held her back as she charged quickly towards them. Mozag watches from a distance as his army was losing against just three people and not even an Army. "Now, they



die!" He Shouted, "I shall now show them MY true power!"

It was at this moment that Mozag began to do something that no other Demon would ever dare to do against their enemies. Mozag began to turn his whole body into nothing more than Armored Steel as his true and ultimate power. Then, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine stared at Mozag in surprise and shock as they see his true form. "My body has been transformed into Armored Steel! You can't even scratch me, now!" Mozag Shouted.

"Is that so?" Ragnar asked.

"You petulant fool," Mozag said. "I have turned my body into Steel, and now I will crush you and your comrades as if they were insects! And I will send you all to burn in Hell!"

And then, they all stand there as they see that he is now more powerful than ever and twice as powerful than any creature Ragnar has ever faced before. They wait and they began to see that Mozag was now walking towards them as his whole body was made of Steel.

### III

Then, there were more Demons that were beginning to charge quickly towards Ragnar, Iris and

Delphine. Ragnar held onto his Greatsword and he points it at all of those Demons that were coming towards him. Iris then pulls out his Sword and she points it at the Demons that were coming towards her as well. And finally, Delphine holds onto her Greatsword and she points it at all of the Demons that were coming towards her. And so, Another Battle began during this Night and the Blood Moon still shown brightly in the Dark Sky.

And so, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine began to charge quickly towards the Demons that were before them. And the Demons also began to charge quickly towards them as their Swords and their Axes were pointed at them. Ragnar, swings his Greatsword and he begins to kill every single one of the Demons that were before him. He begins to block and he dodges each and every single one of the attacks that the Demons throw at him. Then, he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners.

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Ragnar Continued onward towards the Demons and nothing else ever held him back as he pushed forward against the Demons. Iris also swings her Sword and she also begins to kill every single one of the Demons that were before her. She

also begins to block and she dodges each and every single one of the attacks that the Demons throw at her. Then, she cuts off their heads, she stabs them on their throats and she slices them on their chests.

And as they fell to the ground, their Blood began to leave their bodies and it stains the hard and solid ground. And so, Iris continues onward towards the Demons and nothing else ever held her back as she pushed forward against the Demons. And finally, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to kill every single one of the Demons that were before her brutally and Violently. The Demons could not even block or even dodge any of the attacks that Delphine gave to them for She was too fast and too strong. Then, she cuts off their heads, she slices them in half and she cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners.

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Delphine Continued onward towards the Demons and nothing else ever held her back as she pushed forward against the Demons. And so, they made themselves approach Mozag where he stood and he began to stare at all of them for a long while. "Well, why throw away your life, Ranger?" Mozag asked, "Do you not fear the Demons, or are you afraid to face me yourself?"

"If you surrender to me, I will let you walk away from here alive! Do not worry yourself about it, I promise not to lay a hand on your pretty little girlfriends."

"I do not dirty my hands fighting with scum like you," Ragnar said. "Scum like you, don't deserve to have a place in this world!"

"So I am Scum, you say?" Mozag asked.

Then, Mozag pulls out his Daedric Greatsword and he starts to charge towards Ragnar as he shields himself with his Greatsword. "DIE, RANGER!" Mozag Shouted.

Then, Ragnar uses his Greatsword and he blocks the attack that Mozag uses on him after he charges towards him. But after he blocked Mozag's attacks, Ragnar loses balance and he falls backwards and lands onto the ground. "Ragnar!" Iris Shouted.

"Iris, stay back!" Delphine Shouted.

Then, the Demons that were behind and in front of Mozag started to walk slowly towards Iris and Delphine to cut them down. "What strength!" Ragnar whispers.

Mozag then uses his Sword at Ragnar again and again and yet again and once more as the Night continues onward. Ragnar blocks each and every single one of Mozag's attacks, but he seemed to be losing his own strength. As he blocked another attack,

Mozag then punches Ragnar in his face and then he falls down to the ground. "I told you! It will never work!" Mozag Shouted, "You cannot even slice me open, you cannot touch me!"

Then, Ragnar begins to get himself up from the ground, very slowly and he looks and stares at Mozag for a long while. *Why?* Ragnar thought. *Why can I not slay this Demon before me? There is nothing more that I can do, my Sword cannot even do any damage.*

Mozag then uses his Greatsword at Ragnar and then Ragnar blocks and dodges each and every single one of the attacks that Mozag gave to him. Delphine then sees Ragnar losing against Mozag and then she felt strength come before her. Then, her eyes turn red and her pupils looked like that of a Creature's pupil and she began to be filled with anger and fury. Then, she looks at all of the Demons that were charging towards her and those that were behind her and Iris. Iris gazed open wide and she stares at Delphine for a long time and sees and witnesses how powerful she is.

Delphine kills all of those Demons that were before her in brutal and violent manners, for she was someone who would not accept defeat, especially in this time and this age. And so, all of the Demons that were there were now dead by the blade and by the hands of Delphine. And then, she approaches Ragnar

as Mozag raises up his Greatsword and was now ready to kill him.

## IV

Delphine blocks that gigantic blow that Mozag was using against Ragnar with her Greatsword and she stands there blocking the attack. "Delphine, What are you doing here?" Ragnar asked, "How did you kill all of those Demons so quickly?"

"Stay behind me, Ragnar." Delphine said. "I'm handling this!"

"So, you don't give up from your enemies, do you not?" Mozag asked, "Never mind that, I will take you all on if I have to. No man can hinder me, I am Invincible against you! AND NOW IT IS TIME FOR YOU TO DIE!!"

Then, Mozag swings his Greatsword and he begins to attack Delphine, and she blocks all of his attacks. Then, Delphine uses her Greatsword and she also begins to attack Mozag and then he began to be backing up from her Greatsword. Both Mozag's and Delphine's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Again, Mozag swings his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then again, Delphine uses her Greatsword and then she begins to

attack Mozag and then he began to be backing up from her Greatsword.

And again, both Mozag's and Delphine's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Yet again, Mozag swings his Greatsword and he begins to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then yet again, Delphine uses her Greatsword and she begins to attack Mozag and then he began to be backing up from her Greatsword. And yet again, both Mozag's and Delphine's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Once more, Mozag swings his Greatsword and he begins to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks.

Then once more, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Mozag and then he began to be backing up from her Greatsword. And once more, both Mozag's and Delphine's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Suddenly, Delphine attacks Mozag again with her Greatsword and the attack was so fast and so powerful that Mozag's Sword shattered in pieces. "You think breaking my Sword is going to scare me away?" Mozag asked, "Guess again, Woman!"

Delphine then stabs her Greatsword to the ground and then she raises her fists up to the air and was ready for another fight. Her eyes were still red

and she still moved like someone who was immortal and she moved like a Berserker. Then, she blocks Mozag's attacks and then she punched him onto his face and he faced the other direction. Then, she punches him a second time and it made him stumble back a bit and then she kicked him in the face. The punches and the kicks left many marks onto Mozag's Steel body and it was making him a bit dizzy.

Mozag feels his face for a moment and then he looks at Delphine for a long while and then he speaks with her, saying, "I do not know how you did that." Then the huge marks began to leave Mozag and his whole body was still made of Armored Steel. "But it will not do you any good. You are still going to Die!"

Then, Delphine pulls out her left hand and she holds it up to the air and she waves it around Mozag as he was standing there. "Hey, why are you waving your hand around like that?" He asked, "You think I am some kind of dozed up figure or something, just what kind of fool do you take me for?"

Then, Delphine uses her left hand and then she swings it at Mozag's stomach and the swing was so fast that it felt like a thunderbolt when she hits him. And the swing left a huge scratch on Mozag's stomach and it would not go away and it could not leave him for it so so large. "Kill me anyway you can," He said. "It will not work!"



Then Blood began to splatter out of his body, and his Steel Body began to shatter and it would not return back to him. More Blood began to leave Mozag and he started to scream in pain as his Blood began to stain the solid ground. All of his steel body was shattered and now he was defenseless and felt very weak against Delphine who was victorious against him. "You're finished, Mozag!" Delphine said, "Now you will tell me everything that I need to know, where is the Emperor?"

"I... I don't know... what you are... talking about." Mozag said.

"The one they call Sheogorath, the Emperor," She said. "The one who is behind all of this. The one who started all of this. Where is he? Start Talking!"

"He is at his Empire, south just from here, he is at his own fortress, with as many Demons as Possible and is now ready to summon Satan from his Throne to start a new age," Mozag said. "You will find him in the plains, just follow the road that leads to the plains and you will be there. There, I have told you about him. Now you everything, show me mercy!"

"Mercy?" Ragnar asked as he gets himself up. "You dare ask for mercy after everything that you have done? I would not seem to imagine what kind of a fool you really are Mozag."

"You are the fool!" Mozag Shouted, "You have lost everything! Everything now belongs to Satan, all will bow before him and worship him. Yes, admit it... you lost and I won. I am the Hero of these Lands, you are nothing!

"Nothing, do you hear?" Then, Mozag started to laugh as loud as he could and he gave out a very menacing laugh at them. "I am the one. I Mozart will be the one that will make sure that you all shall burn in the pits of Hell..."

## V

Before Mozag could say or do anything else, Ragnar rushes over to him and he swings his Greatsword and he slices Mozag's head off and all of his Blood left him. Then all of the other Demons that were standing there left that place and they ran for their lives and went someplace else. Ragnar stood there for a long time and Iris walks before him and Delphine and she stood before him. "Ragnar, are you alright?" Iris asked, "You feel awful."

Then, Ragnar turns towards Iris and he begins to see the concerned and afraid look on her face and on her eyes. "Oh, I'm just fine," he said. "Come On, we are done here."

And so, they all left the mountains and they went back onto the long and Dark Road and they continued walking upon it. "So, what happens now?" Iris asked.

"Now, we find the Emperor," Ragnar Answered. "And we must move quickly. This could be the end to our long suffering and this could be the end to this Madness. We must tread lightly to their mighty fortress and we shall do what we do best, fight to the death. We have come a long way, we have done what no other person would dare to do, kill those Demons wherever we can find them."

"We must ensure that the lands of the Earth are restored to light and not darkness," Delphine said. "This is not just about defeating these Demons, this is about restoring order to these Lands, to all of the lands of the Earth."

Then, they continued to walk for a very long time and the Sun was up in the Morning Sky as they began to feel a bit sleepy. "Let's find a place to rest, we will need it," Delphine said.

"Of course," Ragnar said.

And so, they found a place to sleep in the plains, and they all sat beside a tree to feel a bit comfortable to rest. And as they rested for a long while, Iris walks before Delphine and she stands before her for she had something to say. "Delphine," Iris said.

"Yes, Iris?" Delphine asked.

"May I speak to you, it's important." Iris said.

"Very well, what do you want?" Delphine asked.

"Who is this man that we are looking for? Who is Sheogorath, and what did he do that made him our enemy?"

Delphine began to remain silent for a few seconds and she could not speak a Word for that very question began to trouble her soul. "It's obvious that your people haven't told you anything, and I can't really blame them," she said. "But they have done the right thing, for truly such things Should not be spoken to someone like you."

"Tell me, Delphine," Iris said. "What do you know?"

"I know too much, especially when it's about the names of these rulers of Hell," Delphine said. "But I know your heart and I can see it in your eyes, you want to know what the world really is like before you. You want to know about dark times and why they're approaching now. However, I am honored to tell you of these things whenever you are ready."

"Yes, I'm ready," Iris said. "Please tell me, you don't have to tell me everything, but... just as much as you can."

"Oh, very well then," Delphine said. "Iris, listen close."

Delphine became silent for a moment for there was so much for her to tell Iris and so, she began to speak, saying, "They called him the Lord of The Never-There, and sovereign of the Shivering Isles. His motives are said to be unknowable. He is sometimes referred to as the Mad Star, the Mad Lord, the Mad One, And The Mad God among other things. His realm, best known as the Shivering Isles, has also been called the Madhouse. It's believed that those who go there lose their sanity forever.

"Of course, only the Mad God Himself May decide who has the privilege to enter. The Golden Saints, or Aureals, And Dark Seducers, or Mazken, are his servants. The Mad God typically manifests on the people as a seemingly harmless, well-dressed man often carrying a Cane, a guise so prevalent it has actually been coined 'Gentleman with a Cane'. Worship of Shegorath was once widespread in the Ancient World, But historically, he has been especially revered by many other countries of the World. Years went by and he became known by few to be mere legend while others called him a Beast to be feared by all."

Then, Delphine was finished with her speech and she had nothing more to say about Shegorath and she was silent for a little bit. "Can it be?" Iris asked, "That someone such as himself could be served by many."

"It's all true, Iris." Delphine said, "That was nothing imaginative that I just told you, it was all from eyewitness accounts and recorded history."

"Such violence and madness against so many people, why on Earth would he do this?" Iris asked.

Ragnar then begins to walk slowly towards Iris as she was looking down at the ground and was trying to understand what was being told to her. "Now you are beginning to see how our little system works, Iris," Ragnar said. "We must put an end to these scum no matter what it will cast us."

"The cost is death, Ragnar." Delphine said.

"Indeed, the cost is too powerful and it is more than we can bear," Ragnar said. "But in the end we are just those people who will fight to the death against our enemies, we live by the Sword and die by the Sword. Iris, we all carry a large burden that is far greater than any burden that the people of this world carry. We have more experience with Demons than anyone else here in this world, they will tremble at our sight, we are going to slaughter them. All of them!"

And so, they finished speaking and they had nothing more to say to each other as they rested under the Morning Sun. The Morning Sun shined brightly in the sky and the cold breeze revolved heavily around them as they were resting themselves.



## CHAPTER 12: THE FINAL BATTLE

And so it has come to this, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine now know where to find the Daedric Lords, the enemies that they had sought to destroy. The Daedric Lords are their enemies and none other has ever dared to take on this dangerous task. The Demons of Hell have been preparing for Satan's eminent return over the lands of the Earth and to begin his reign. Everything has led to this very moment in time and everything has been leading to the day when they would finally find their enemies. The Kingdom is just a couple of miles away from where they are and they will stop at nothing to reach that very place.

On the day that they started their blood-soaked journey, I watched them, each and every single one of them. I watched them become even stronger and I have seen them develop a large friendship and relationship in each other. I have seen them rest easily from the long battles that they have fought and each battle got progressively longer. I will still be with them, I will continue to be with them until the end of time and I will be with them in this, their moment of victory. Farewell, for now.



There was once a time when Satan was more than just a God, He was known as Lucifer before the fall and ever since time began. Lucifer knew everything about the significance of the fundamental love of the Human ancestors and about God's providence. He feared God and held him in awe, and he also knew about the position that he was expected to keep. For these reasons, he has always been in a state of insecurity; he has lived in fear that one day a particular incident would occur. This has been the Story of Lucifer's life and this is how it all happened from his rise to his fall from Heaven.

Lucifer has lived in a state of insecurity and fear, and has forgotten what it was like to enjoy love and peace. The time when he lived surrounded by God's love and in God's bosom is nothing but a very distant memory to him. Today, he struggles in the hope that he desires can be satisfied in the limited scope of his life of fear and dread. He has hoped that his will could become reality, his life has been a repetition of this pattern. Lucifer lived with oneness of insecurity and fear, if God is associated with the Holy Spirit of love, joy, hope, peace and warmth, then Lucifer is closely associated with insecurity and fear.

This is because he took that which belonged to someone else, this has been the origin of every aspect

of his existence. No matter how hard he may try, he cannot fool people completely, this is because he is a creature created by God and that is how he was created. The way he can do this is to keep his position and his station in life. He is not in his own position but in someone else's, and he is pretending to be the rightful owner of that position. As long as this is true, he lives with the insecurity that the true owner of that position may someday appear.

Lucifer was created at the time God created all creatures, his status was that of an errand runner who would carry out various tasks that required attention in the Garden of Eden. God loved Lucifer, He closely inspected all of the created beings in the Garden of Eden, developed them, and guided and taught Lucifer to enjoy them. For his part, Lucifer went throughout the Garden in accordance with God's commands; he enjoyed his life there and was obedient to God. Later, God created Adam and Eve, and set them in the position of his Children; he directed Lucifer to look after, teach, and love Adam and Eve with all of his Heart. At first, Lucifer was extremely happy; he took pride in the fact that he was looking after God's children.

He was moved by God's love for him, and he protected God's children and raised them with care. As time went on, though, Lucifer saw that Adam and Eve

were growing up just fine with less and less need of his help. Gradually, Lucifer began to turn against God's love; The seed of resentment toward God was beginning to sprout within Lucifer's heart. Sometimes, Satan would protest to God; this is how he began to rebel against God. There were several incidents of this type, and eventually Lucifer came to the point in his heart where he no longer stood in the position that he needed to maintain.

He began to think that he would like to live in the same position as Adam and Eve, and he began to have lustful feelings toward Eve. Gradually, Lucifer began to avoid being seen by God; Meanwhile, Adam and Eve were naive, and followed Lucifer's every action. Lucifer acted as though he alone were their parent; he avoided God, and acted as though he alone was the master of creation. He controlled Adam and Eve, and gradually led them further and further away from God; he avoided God more and more, and acted like a Master, a king, and even the parent. Lucifer's Heart was already filled with hatred and curses for God and his soul was already filled with Darkness.

Lucifer no longer cared about his position or his station in life, God admonished him on many occasions. God Admonished Lucifer from several angles to let him know that abandoning his position was a great sin in the eyes of God. Each time, though,

Lucifer rebelled by telling God that anything God did in his position, Lucifer could also do. God gave several warnings, trying to avoid having a blot on history and his old role served him no longer and Lucifer was now different in God's eyes.

## II

So after his illicit relationship with Eve, Lucifer became separated from God; he attacked God and rebelled against him in every aspect of his life. Now, a great sign appeared in Heaven: a woman clothed with the sun, with the Moon under her feet, and on her head a garland of twelve stars. Then, being with child, she cried out in labor and in pain to give birth. And another sign appeared in Heaven: behold, a great, fiery red Dragon having seven heads and ten horns, and seven diadems on his heads. His tail drew a third of the stars of Heaven and he threw them to the Earth.

And the Dragon stood before the Woman who was ready to give birth, to devour her child as soon as it was born. She bore a Male child who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron. And her Child was caught up to God and his Throne. Then, the Woman fled into the Wilderness, where she has a place prepared by God, that they should feed her there one thousand two hundred and sixty days. And War broke out in Heaven:

Michael and his Angels fought against the Dragon; And The Dragon And his Angels fought, but they did not prevail, nor was there a place found for them in Heaven any longer.

So the Great Dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceived the Whole World. He was cast down to the Earth and his Angels were also cast down with him. Then a loud voice was heard from Heaven, saying, "Now Salvation, And Strength, And The Kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ have come, for the accuser of our brethren, who accused them before our God Day and Night, has been cast down. And they overcame him by the Blood of the Lamb and by the Word of their Testimony, and they did not love their lives to the death. Therefore rejoice, O Heavens, and you who dwell in them!

"Woe to the inhabitants of the Earth and the Sea! For the Devil has come down to you, having great wrath, because he knows he has a short time!"

Now when the Dragon saw that he had been cast down to the Earth, he persecuted the Woman who gave birth to the male Child. But the Woman was given two wings of a great Eagle, that she might fly into the Wilderness to her place, where she is nourished for a Time and Times and half a Time, from the presence of the Serpent. So the Serpent spewed Water out of his

mouth like a flood after the Woman, that he might cause her to be carried away by the Flood. But the Earth helped the Woman, And The Earth opened its mouth and swallowed up the flood which the Dragon has spewed out of his mouth. And the Dragon was enraged with the Woman, and he went to make War with the rest of her offspring, who keep the commandments of God and have the Testimony of Jesus.

This was at a time in ages long past and this was at a Time when the Earth trembled at the coming of the End of Days. Satan ruled the pits of Hell and God ruled in Heaven as his Angels Worshipped only him and him alone. There can be only one God that will succeed and reign Victorious for all of the years to come and none other shall take his place. For all of these years, the Daedric Lords and the Demons have been preparing for his eminent return to the Earth. They have been building a Kingdom in his name so they could summon him to rule over all the Earth.

The Daedric Lords were very powerful beings that lived for many centuries and ruled the Underworld and along with the Demons. This is now the time of the Advent, an Age where the Darkness Shall eclipse light and an Age where the Demons shall roam all over the Earth. The final Battle shall be fought in the Kingdom built by none other than the Daedric

Lords that have been ruling over all that lives and breathes. Everything that Ragnar, Iris and Delphine have been fighting for has led to this very moment in time. They will stop at nothing, they will keep going forward and they will continue to kill every Demon that roams this Earth.

Meanwhile, they decide to find a place for themselves to rest for a little while before they could move on. Through most of the Afternoon, and it was already evening, they have been walking on this long and Dark Road laid before them. From what they understand, it seemed to be just a few more miles away from where they were standing. And as Delphine, gazes onward at the Lands before her, Ragnar and Iris were waiting for her to give an Answer to them. Then, she walks slowly towards them as she looks down at the ground and beginning to feel a bit distressed.

"Are you alright, Delphine?" Ragnar asked.

"Yes. I'm alright," She answered. "We have already walked so far out into this big World before us and for so long we have fought against these dark creatures."

"Of course," Ragnar said. "And this is the task that I was destined for and this is what I've been doing throughout the Majority of my life."

"I understand that," Delphine said. "But the next place that we are going to, we are either going to win this War that we had against the Demons or one of us is going to be slaughtered by them."

"Are you afraid of Death, Delphine?"

"I have never feared Death, Ragnar. I have walked the many roads of Death for as long as I could remember. For so long, I have hunted down and I have killed many Demons in my way.

### III

"None have ever took me down and no Demon has ever left me wounded after a Battle. I devoted my entire life to Kill every Demon that Lives and Breathes on this Earth, I tend to make sure that they all fear me and despair."

"Tell me, what will you do after you have done that which you have started long ago?"

"I finally rest. I will atone for all of the Sins that I committed and there I shall await what else will lie before me. I do not know what will happen to me and I do not know what the future has in store for me. All I ever know is that I must go and defeat my greatest enemy and I shall end my Journey as a Warrior who runs from both the living and the Dead. And so, As I



end my Journey, that is when I shall have my long and awaited rest."

And then, Ragnar and Delphine began to look and stare at each other for a long while before they could say or do anything else. "Delphine there is still so much more that I don't know about you." Ragnar said.

"And what makes you say that?" Delphine asked.

"Your power, Delphine," Ragnar said. "It is unlike anything that I have ever seen. You have killed twice as much Demons out there in the world more than I have. And you leave the Battlefield with a Hundred, no... a thousand Corpses of Demons and you walk away as if nobody touched you."

And so, Delphine begins to look down at the ground for a long while before she could say anything else to Ragnar. Delphine knew that she could not hold back her past any longer from anyone else for it was dark and tragic. Her past was full of darkness and despair and her Soul was filled with a fiery spirit that cries out in pain and torment. She knew that someday the Devil will come for her and take her to rot in the pits of Hell for all eternity. She believed that if anyone else would know of the terrible Darkness inside of her then it would be her gravest mistake.

And so, she looks up to both Ragnar and Iris to speak with them once again, saying, "You know my

name... but you do not know my ways. I have told you once that I am an Ebony Warrior, but I have hidden my true nature for far too long. There is much about me that I will not let others know, only you two can know this and keep it as a secret and tell none other."

Then, she gazes at the Evening Sky and she looks at the Stars that were beginning to shine brightly in the sky. She begins to reflect herself on the past that she once lived through and all of the days of her life that she once lived. She still wished to keep away her dark secrets laid deep inside of her heart and Soul and she hesitated to tell anyone. There is a Darkness Upon the land, but there is one that is darker and one that is burning deep within Delphine's body. And so, she was done hiding the truth of her cursed past and she could no longer hide away that which was locked inside of her.

And so, she looks at Ragnar and Iris and she stares at the both of them for a long while before she could say anything. Then she spoke to them, saying, "Ragnar... Iris. Listen close to what I must say. I come from a land called Moria. I was born in a short village called Albion by the shores of Silver Lake.

"The days of my life were once peaceful and merry. All of the years of my Youth, I did not know what was ahead for me nor my family. But by the time when I was a Young Adult, that was the day that

changed my life. The Grim Reaper came on that day and he slaughtered all of those that tried to fight back against him. Then he came for me, Death came for me and he tormented me, he poisoned me and he gave me his own power.

"It costed me my very soul. My Soul now revolves around Darkness and Death. My Veins are now corrupted with the Poison that he inflicted onto me. And above all, my Heart was once filled with Love, but now it is filled with Hate and Torment. And throughout all the events of my life, I have done nothing more than hunt down the Grim Reaper to destroy him for the humiliation that he gave to me that day.

"I have killed many Demons that stood in my way and I have never held back and I have never given in to any of my enemies. I continued onward to reach The Grim Reaper and still I fought on to the death and I never gave in. And so, I went there and I defeated the Grim Reaper after many years of endless battles and of walking on the Road that led me to him. But Fate made me rest and I hid myself from the World for a Thousand Years until the time came for me to walk the Earth again. And so, I am cursed to wander the lands of the Earth for all eternity until all of the Evil that roams this Earth is destroyed."

And so, Delphine finishes speaking to them and Ragnar and Iris look and stare at Delphine for a long while. The words that Delphine spoke to them were strong and therefore sorrowful when she spoke to them. They didn't regret anything when they let her speak to them as the Night began to come forth before them. And as the Night was shortly coming, Delphine began to feel terrified in herself on what else is there in store for them.

#### IV

Then Iris began to speak with Delphine, Saying, "Delphine, What does all of this mean?"

"I do not blame you for asking me that," Delphine answered, "Even I couldn't get around to know anything that has happened to me. But the reason why I am telling you this now, is because you're the only ones that I can trust. You're all the closest things that I ever had to friends. It has been a very long time ever since I had ever been with someone who is willing to fight with me against the Demons."

"This Power," Iris said. "Does this all mean... that you...?"

"Yes Iris," Delphine Answered. "I am immortal. I am the one who runs from both the living and the dead. I am the instrument of Death against my

enemies. I am the bringer of Torment and Despair against all of those who would try and bring me down. I am... unstoppable, I am... invincible. I can never lose, not ever.

"And now, all I want to do is escape. I never asked for this life, I never asked to be someone like this. It's not like I asked to be a Warrior of Darkness. I always wanted to live a peaceful, calm and quiet life with someone who would love me and be with me forever. But all of that was taken from me on that day, that was the day when I would fight back against the darkness and save the Earth from Evil."

Then, Iris begins to see Delphine with both of her knees onto the ground and she started to look down and not look at the two of them. She was looking down and she began to shed a few tears and her eyes were very watery and she began looking sorrowful. She was greatly distressed at what she had to say to the two of them and she began to drop many drops of sweat. Then, Iris goes over to Delphine and she has both of her hands locked on the back of Delphine's head and she begins to give her a hug. Delphine sees that Iris was hugging her and she began to feel a bit better for a few seconds while she was doing this.

"Iris," Delphine said. "You do not have to do this."

"It's alright, Delphine." Iris said, "You're gonna be okay. You said it yourself, there's nothing to fear."

Then, Ragnar walks over to Iris and Delphine as she was still hugging her and offering her comfort while the Evening went onward. "Iris," He said. "This is probably not the time for you to speak with her. You do not want to talk to her while she is at this state."

"What?" Iris asked.

"Ragnar, let her be." Delphine said, "I'm not stopping her, she isn't doing anything wrong. And I'm quite alright for the moment."

Then, Iris let's herself go and she stops hugging Delphine as she gets herself up from the ground and she looks at the both of them. "Iris, you have a tender heart and your faith for me is great," She said. "And Ragnar, What is it that you wish for now that you know the truth about me?"

"I do not know what it is that I wish for," Ragnar said. "But I do know that once we're done with this task of ours, I can rest myself from all the battles that I have fought. But what about you, what will you surely do?"

"I'm sorry... but I cannot answer that." Delphine said.

And then, Ragnar and Iris began to stare at Delphine confusingly after she said this to The both of them. "Why not? I mean, now all of a sudden." Ragnar said.

"It's not sudden," Delphine said. "When I was on this journey, I did not know the Fate that will lie before me when I began this task of mine. It is unknown to me what Shall happen or what the future will hold for me. But I do know that I cannot resist my Fate, I must accept whatever it will give me. Will I find peace in death, or will I find nothing but darkness and be surrounded by the burning, fiery flames of Hell for all eternity? I do not know, and I probably never will."

"Are you dissatisfied or something?" Iris asked.

"Dissatisfied?" Delphine asked her, "I got no reason to be. You two are certainly different from the other friends that I once had. You two are willing to throw away everything and risk your lives in fighting these creatures. My time with you was really fun. It feels like it's been a big feast or something all this time. No way am I ever dissatisfied."

"Then, why in the world would you not find rest or even the slightest bit of feeling like you were having a restful day?" Iris asked.

"Iris, do not make the situation on her even worse," Ragnar said. "For so long, we have fought these Demons and every night, we have stained the ground with their blood every single night. And every night, we have given it all of our strength against these dark beings. But all she will ever truly wish for is the head of her greatest enemy, she'd rather fight for her

life then live it out. She never told me why though, but all that she ever cared about was swinging her Sword at her enemies."

Then, Delphine begins to look away from Iris and she begins to stare at Ragnar as he said this about her. "You're right, Ragnar." Delphine said, "I would rather fight for my own life... then live it. And it's just like you said, I only care about the enemy falling down and trembling before me as I stab him with my Sword. That was all I really cared about.

## V

"When I first killed a Demon, I was just as fearful as anyone could ever be. I still didn't know right from left. I haven't learned anything off the battlefield since then—and I haven't tried to learn. Killing to survive, there was nothing else I could do. That was everything.

"But it was alright. If one person, anyone, had looked my way..." Delphine could not think of anything else to say for she paused for a moment to come to terms with what she was saying. She began to think of her time with the one that loved her and truly cared for her more than anything else. "But wandering the many roads of this World made me realize that it



wouldn't do me any good in trying to survive," she said. "It was just something of a childish complaint."

And before she could say or do anything else, Ragnar walks towards Delphine and now he was standing before her. "What talk is this?" He asked her, "Are you really going to go through with this, Delphine?"

"What are you trying to insist, Ragnar?" Delphine asked.

"I'm not insisting anything," Ragnar answered. "I'm just letting you know this so you can keep it to yourself."

"And what is that?" She Asked.

"The idea that you're here risking your own life and I'm risking mine as well for the sake of humanity." He answered. "I'm simply trying to protect you from whatever harm shall come to you from here on out."

"You want... to protect me?"

"Of course I do. We all do. That is what we have sworn to each other when we are on this journey. They will not kill you while I live."

"You would rather give up your life to preserve my life?"

"Your life, your skin, your will, and your soul? Without question. I am just a Ranger, one who has walked the many roads of this World and killing as many Demons as I possibly can. This is the work that I

was born for and this is my destiny. Yours is the wisdom of ages. I believe you and I will save the lives of these people for all eternity."

Then, Delphine looks at Ragnar and she stares at him for a long while before she could say or do anything else. "You are the greatest of your people, Ragnar," Delphine said. "You have a soul, I think. Perhaps that is better than reading a collection of dusty old books and trying so hard to seek redemption the harder way. Perhaps you are indeed willing to throw away everything for the sake of our people and their freedom."

"I choose my death as I chose my life." Ragnar said.

"That's all well and good," She said. "But, this is no place for us to die. The evil that lives here is great and far more powerful than you can possibly imagine. There are other ways to settle this sort of thing. And we will be there to solve it. Even if we destroy the Evil of this Earth, it will always find a way to return here and the day will come for us again to put it all to an end. We must ensure that the Earth is restored to light and not darkness, that is the deal that we kept with each other, did we not?"

"Of course and I have kept it ever since we began this burden," he said. "And I know that we must go and

do what we can to save our people. And I also know this, your soul can be saved."

"What?" She asked.

"Your soul can be saved. The Devil will never claim you no matter how hard he tries. You will never find yourself a place in Hell, I'm sure of it. You will find yourself a place in Heaven, you can be with your family and your loved ones again."

"And I thank you for giving me such a statement. It has been too long ever since someone has ever given me such a word. When I sent the Grim Reaper back to Hell along with all of the Demons with him, the darkness that I had sought to destroy had already entered inside me. I hid myself from the face of the Earth, I tended myself to the wounds dealt with Death itself and I waited for the right time to return here. And now, we have almost reached the end of our journey together against the Great Evil."

And so, Delphine began to look and stare at both Ragnar and Iris for a long while and could not think of anything else to say. "So what happens now?" Iris asked.

"Now it is time to bring down the Daedric Lords and leave no Demon alive. Everything we have fought for has led to this very moment. On this day, our enemy will know the fullness of our determination, the true depth of our anger, and the exalted righteousness

of our cause. God and all his angels are watching, the spirits of our ancestors are stirring. And men under suns yet to dawn will be transformed by what we do here tonight.

"Fear no pain nor darkness. For Heaven awaits all those who die with weapons in their hands, and courage in their hearts. We now fight our way against the strongest, the greatest and the most powerful of all Demons to cut off the head of their masters. And in that moment, God Himself will look down and see the Earth as it was meant to be. Full of people who are mighty, powerful and free! Ragnar... Iris. We three, we can destroy them."

And so, they all agreed to Delphine's words once again as they fought their way against the Demons of Hell. Now they are determined and prepared for the Final Battle against the creatures of Darkness and the Daedric Lords. Tonight, they will make sure that they fulfill their purpose and their destiny for the sake of the Earth.

## VI

And now, the Night came for all of them and the full Moon was in their presence and they have now reached the Kingdom that the Daedric Lords built. The Kingdom was just like any Kingdom of this World

before the Daedra took them all for their own. The World had already plunged into darkness and the people already saw for themselves death and despair surrounding them. But this did not stop Ragnar, Iris and Delphine as they were all now before the Kingdom of the ones that they sought to destroy. But their War was far from over as they have reached this large and grand Kingdom of the Daedric Lords.

"Are you ready for this, Delphine?" Ragnar asked.

"...No," She answered. "But let us put an end to this anyway."

"This could be the end for us. Perhaps even the World." Iris said.

"This shall not be our end!" Delphine said, "Now realize, the Stars they die and Darkness has fallen in paradise. But we will be strong and we will fight against the creatures of the Night."

Suddenly, the ground began to shake below them and the Moon began to be covered in Blood as the Night came before them all. And then, the Demons began to come out from the ground and many of them came from the doors of the Kingdom. They all roared towards them and shrieked at the air as they were standing before them. They all had their Swords, their Axes, their maces and their Spears pulled out as they were ready for a long battle against them. And many of

their captains and their bodyguards come walking slowly towards Ragnar, Iris and Delphine.

They all had a fiery anger against the three of them and they were indeed ready for this battle to commence, therefore, the Demons shrieked again. The Captains and the Bodyguards Shouted Before them, saying, "The Time Has Come, the Time of the Great Nocturnal Festival! The Feast that happens once every thousand years, this is the Advent!"

*The Advent!* Delphine thinks to herself.

*The Advent?* Ragnar thought.

"They Come!" They Shouted again, "They Are Coming!! The Advent, The Sovereign of the Supreme Beings! THIS IS THE ADVENT OF THE FOUR DAEDRIC LORDS!!"

Suddenly, a Giant Daedra rose from the ground and stood up, it was a Woman, and she looks at the many Demons before her. She then grew wings from her back and her wings covered her whole body as she stood there before them all. She then finds herself standing atop the rampart of the Kingdom and stares down at Ragnar, Iris and Delphine. "Just now, was that... a Giant?!" Ragnar asked.

"A Demon, And it's a large one!" Iris Shouted.

"They are no ordinary Demons!" Delphine said, "They are the Daedric Lords, the most powerful of any creature that roamed the depths of Hell!"

Then another Daedra came down and it came from the sky and seemed like it was going to fall on top of Ragnar, Iris and Delphine. But then it disappears from thin air and then it flew all over and looks right at Ragnar, Iris and Delphine as he also stood atop of the Rampart. "From one to the next... it's a Dream, it's got to be!" Iris said.

Yet another Daedra comes out and it comes out from the ground and it made a great scream and it filled the sky and the ground. The Scream was so loud that Ragnar, Iris and Delphine covered their ears and looked away from the Daedric Lord. "What is that Thing?!" Ragnar Shouted.

And then one final Daedra appeared before them all and he gazes down to the many Demons, and it was Sheogorath, the Emperor, their long-awaited enemy stood before them atop of the Rampart. *So, those are the ones, aren't they? The Daedric Lords?!* Ragnar thought.

Then all of the Demons gave praise and they bowed down before the Daedric Lords that stood tall before them. "What's the big deal?" Iris asked.

And then, Sheogorath the Emperor looks down to all of the Demons that were down there bowing their heads before them. And he began to speak to them in a dark and eerie voice, saying, "At this great time of blessing, I bid you welcome to this distant

setting, this abstract time. Ye lambs of Satan, the Ungodly God Born of Man, Lord of the Earth and King of the World, Enjoy this sacred Nocturnal Feast and all of its glory to the fullest! And you Ranger, you skillful Hunter, and the one they call The Ebony Warrior... you are all fat too late, at this time and in this place."

"What does he want from us?" Ragnar asked.

"How does he know who we are?!" Iris asked.

"I know all that there is to Know!" Sheogorath said, "I know you, Ragnar of Midland. I know you Iris, follower of Ragnar. And I know you Delphine of Moria, the Ebony Warrior. Any moment from now, we will summon Satan from his Throne and he will hear us and he will bring down ruin and Death to all who oppose his great name!"

Then, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he points it at all of the Demons and including the Daedric Lords that stood before him. "I heard enough of your Goddamn Nonsense!" He Shouted.

"Ragnar." Iris said his name.

"First you send your Hordes onto this world, make Slaves of my people, start a War against mankind, and now you say whatever the Hell you want?! So what if I killed many of your kind, you have brought this all upon yourselves! Keep your stupid Crap to yourself, I shall have none of it! So do



yourselves a Favor and don't lump us together with you freaks!" He Shouted Once More at them.

Then the Daedric Lords and the Demons begin to laugh to themselves again as the Night continued Onward where they stood.

## VII

The Daedric Goddess, Vaermina speaks to them, saying, "My, such a beautiful friendship the three of you share, you shall make the most worthy offering when we perform our ritual."

"Ritual?" Ragnar asked.

"Yes, a precious ritual so that we may Summon Satan from his Throne." Vaermina answered.

Then, the Daedric Lord Malacath comes forward to see them and he also begins to speak with them, saying, "You See, you know... but you refuse to understand. When Satan is summoned from his Throne, he will require a Sacrifice of anyone who will dare stand against him! Satan is a mighty and powerful being and he has been seeking to rule this world for thousands of years. And now those thousands of years shall surely come to an end."

Then all of the Demons laughed out loud and all Ragnar, Iris and Delphine could ever hear were the laughter of Demons. Then, the Demons began to be

prepared for a Battle as the Daedric Lords were looking down upon them. The three Hunters began to stare open wide as the Demons were being more prepared than ever to fight them. *There was but one word to describe it... despair.* Ragnar thought.

"So, you Creatures want to summon your God from his Throne in exchange for every one of our lives?!" Ragnar asked them.

"Not quite," Vaermina Answered. "What will do that... is his will. He will be the one to decide your fate, and he shall decide how you will die before him."

Then, they all stood there for a moment for they were speechless at what the Daedric Lords had to say. Then, Sheogorath spoke to them once more, saying, "They say that you three have the power to take us all down. They call you Heroes, they call you legends to those who live in hiding and in torment, they even say that one of you killed a Hundred Demons all by yourself. Let's see if what they say about you is true. We will be waiting for you, in the Throne Room."

And so, the Daedric Lords vanished out of their sight and the Demons began once more to shriek in the air as they are ready for a long Battle to remember. And then, Ragnar walks forward towards Iris and Delphine and he begins to speak with them, saying, "Iris... Delphine. We three, we have come a long way. We have taken back the Kingdoms of this World in

killing the Daedra that took them over! But the world is still not ours, yet! Satan's Armies advances and they are ready to make slaves of our people and they are ready to devour us where we stand!

"But we will not die under his rule, we do not Serve Satan nor his Apostles! We will sally forth into this Kingdom and take this land from them! We fight for this Earth! We fight to the Death!"

And then, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he begins to walk a few steps forward towards the Demons that were staring at them. The cold winds blow heavily onto them as the Night is young and the final battle is beginning before them. And then, he turns around slowly and he begins to stare at both Iris and Delphine as they are also ready for this Battle to commence. He stares at them feeling both frustrated but also hopeful that they would make it out of this Battle alive. He then gives a short smile and he says to them, "Let's take them."

And so, Ragnar holds onto his Greatsword and he charges forward towards the Kingdom and against the Demons. He charged forward towards them as fast as he could with all of his anger and all of his fury let out against them. Delphine also pulls out her Greatsword and she looks at Iris as she also pulls out her Sword. "Iris, with me!" She Shouted.

Then, Delphine also charges forward and Iris charges along with her and they all ran as fast as they could against their enemies. Ragnar was already far ahead behind them as he was running towards the Demons as fast as he could. The Demons also began to charge quickly towards Ragnar, Iris and Delphine as the Night continued onward. The Demons had their razor sharp Weapons pointing directly at the Three Hunters as they were charging towards them. And so, the final battle between the Demons and Ragnar, Iris and Delphine begins here and now.

Ragnar charges quickly towards the Demons and he swings his Greatsword and he began to kill every single one of the Demons in his path. He blocks and he dodges each and every single one of the attacks that the Demons throw at him. Then he uses his Greatsword and he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners. Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Ragnar Continued onward towards the Demons and nothing else ever stood in his way as he fought on.

Iris also charges quickly towards the Demons and she swings her Sword and she began to kill every single one of the Demons in her path. She blocks and she dodges each and every single one of the attacks

that the Demons throw at her. Then she uses her Sword and she slices them on their chests, she stabs them on their throats, and she cuts off their heads with her Sword. Again, Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Iris continues onward towards the Demons and nothing else ever stood in her way as she fought on.

And finally, Delphine charges quickly towards the Demons and she swings her Greatsword and she began to kill every single one of the Demons brutally and Violently.

## VIII

The Demons could not even block or even dodge the attacks that Delphine was throwing at them as she charged quickly towards them. She swings her Greatsword as fast as she could and she cuts off their heads, she slices them in half and she cleaves them open brutally and Violently. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Delphine Continued onward towards the Demons and nothing else ever stood in her way as she fought on.

This Battle between Ragnar, Iris and Delphine against the Demons began to last longer than expected

for them. The Demons grew stronger and they were more fearsome and more determined than they had ever been. They now greatly desired their Swords to be stained with the Blood of their new enemies that were now battling them. This Battle was indeed a gruesome and bloody battle that would remain with them from now until the End of Days. And so, the Three Warriors fought on with all the Power, Strength and Courage that they could possibly have against their enemies.

And even so, the Battle outside the Kingdom ended, and they gave it their all and defeated the Demons that were before them. But the real Battle was far from over and it continued from now until the Morning comes for them. Ragnar, Iris and Delphine walk into the Main Hall of this mighty Castle that stood in their way. It seemed and felt very quiet as they entered in here and everything was Dark and gloomy in their presence. And they walked forward a few steps as they gazed upon the Dark Hall that was before them as they were in this Castle.

Suddenly, many eyes began to appear in the Dark and many Candles began to light up in this Main Hall where they stood. It was another group of Demons that were with them and there were also a group of Demon Generals and Bodyguards before them. They began to walk slowly towards Ragnar, Iris and

Delphine as they began to look openly towards their enemies. Then, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and was once again ready for a battle against the Demons. He then speaks to Iris and Delphine, saying, "I terrify them. Iris disorients them. Delphine goes over the top and we support her."

"Of course." Iris said.

Then, Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and she holds onto it for a long while as she stares at the Demons. "Now," She said. "Fight to the Death!"

And so, The Demons that were before them begin to charge quickly towards them as they are once again ready for a battle. Then Ragnar, Iris and Delphine also began to charge quickly towards the Demons as they are also ready for another Battle. Ragnar charges towards the Demons and he swings his Greatsword and he begins to kill every single Demon that stood before him. He blocks and he dodges every single one of their attacks that the Demons throw at him as he defended himself. Then, he uses his Greatsword and he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners.

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Ragnar Continued onward into battle towards the Demons and nothing else ever

stood in his way. Then, Iris pulls out her Bow and many Arrows and she began to aim and Shoot down every single Demon in her path. She also blocks and she dodges each and every single one of the attacks that the Demons were throwing at her. She uses her Bow and she Shoots them onto their heads, their chests and it lands onto their eyes and they began to fall down.

As the Arrows were landing onto them, their Blood began to leave their bodies and it began to stain the solid ground. And so, Iris continues onward into battle towards the Demons and nothing else ever stood in her way. And finally, Delphine holds onto her Greatsword and she swings it and kills every single Demon that stood before her. The Demons could not even block or even dodge the attacks that Delphine was throwing at them for she was too fast for them. She uses her Greatsword and she cuts off their heads, she slices them in half and she cleaves them open brutally and Violently.

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Delphine continues onward into battle towards the Demons and nothing else ever stood in her way. Again, this Battle lasted longer than they ever expected it to be as the Demons were getting stronger each day. Each and every single night, the



Demons would prepare themselves to be twice as skillful and ready so they could live another day. They did not hesitate and they did not show mercy against their enemies that wish to bring them down.

And so Ragnar, Iris and Delphine fight on against them with all of the strength and the skills that they had in Battle. They all fought to the death against all of their enemies with the Sword and the Bow and of course, they did not hold back against them. Even the Captains and the Bodyguards of the Demons could not even stand a chance against the Three Hunters. Delphine fought them all with the Bloodlust anger that was deep into her soul and they all trembled at her dark power. They fought on until the Demons could draw their last breath and they were cleaved, decapitated and even sliced in two.

## IX

And so the Battle between Ragnar, Iris and Delphine against those Demons ended as the Main Hall was covered in dead bodies. And as they stopped for breath after that battle and after Iris goes over and takes some of the Arrows that the Demons had with them, more Demons began to come after them. Then Ragnar, Iris and Delphine began to charge quickly towards them after relaxing for a minute. For even a

minute of fresh air did not even stop the Demons from ever charging forward into battle. And then, the Demons pull out their Swords, their Axes and their Spears and they pointed them towards the Three Hunters as they were charging forward.

Then, Ragnar holds onto his Greatsword and he swings it and he begins to kill every single Demon that stood before him. He blocks and he dodges each and every single one of the attacks that the Demons were throwing at him. Then, he uses his Greatsword and he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Ragnar continues onward into battle towards the Demons and nothing else ever stood in his way.

Then, Iris pulls out her Sword and she swings it and she also begins to kill every single Demon that stood before her. She blocks and she dodges each and every single one of the attacks that the Demons were throwing at her. Then, she uses her Sword and she stabs them on their chests, she cuts off their Arms and Legs, and she cuts off their heads. As she was stabbing them and cutting them down, their Blood began to leave them and stain the hard solid ground. And so,

Iris continues onward into battle towards the Demons and nothing else ever stood in her.

Then, Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and she swings it and she begins to kill every single Demon that stood before her. The Demons could not even block or even dodge the attacks that Delphine was throwing at them for she was too fast for them. Then, she uses her Greatsword and she cuts off their heads, she slices them in half and she cleaves them open brutally and Violently. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Delphine continues onward into battle towards the Demons and nothing else ever stood in her way.

Once again, the Battle continues onward and it went on for a very long time than they would ever expect. This Battle was one that would be long remembered in this Journey that they had for themselves. It was a long and bloody battle that even the walls and the ceiling began to be painted with the blood of the Demons. Ragnar, Iris and Delphine gave it their all and they used their skills and their strengths and they pushed on and made it through. Once again, Delphine uses the Dark Power that was inflicted onto her against these Demons that were fighting her.

And so, this other battle between Ragnar, Iris and Delphine against these Demons ended and they

stopped for a minute for breath. And then, they exit the Main Hall and they run towards the Throne Room that was in this Castle. As they ran they began to see many sculptures and many paintings of events that occurred long ago. The Throne Room was just up ahead as they kept running towards it to make it towards the Daedric Lords. And then, more Demons began to be standing in their way as they were running towards the Throne Room.

And then, Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and she begins to run even faster than Ragnar and Iris as there were more Demons. And then, her eyes started to turn red and her pupils began to look like that of a Dark Creature's Pupil as she was running. Then, her entire body began to be covered with the black veins that were deep inside of her and they began to show on her face. Ragnar and Iris began to see Delphine for what she is and now she had nothing more to hide from them for now they know the truth. Then, she uses the Dark Power that was with her and she began to go Berserk against them and she shouted a great and raging scream against the Demons.

She goes towards all of them and she starts to rip them all apart as they were standing in her way and waiting to charge towards them. She rips out their hearts, she rips off their faces, she tears out their rib cages and she uses them against the Demons. Her

anger and her rage was hot against the Demons and she started to give them a painful, gruesome death. And as she swings her Large Sword, they were being torn to pieces and she was slicing and curing them down until they drew their last breath. As Ragnar and Iris were staring onward at Delphine, a few of the Demons were charging towards them.

And once again, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he begins to kill every single Demon that stood before him. He blocks and he dodges each and every single one of the attacks that the Demons were throwing at him. He uses his Greatsword and he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners. Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Ragnar sees more of what Delphine was doing against the Demons that were before her and she was still ripping them apart.

## X

And as the Hall was covered with more Dead bodies than usual, Delphine goes to a Demon and slowly, she steps onto its head and she uses her foot and she squeezes it down to the ground and his head explodes. Then, Ragnar and Iris walked slowly

towards Delphine and she sees that her power went back into her Soul and her veins stopped showing on her face. She breathes in and she breathes out heavily as she started to come back to her senses. "Delphine?" Ragnar asked.

"Delphine, What was that?" Iris asked.

"It's this power inflicted inside me," Delphine answered. "It is what's keeping me alive and pushing forward. I told you before, there is a terrible darkness inflicted onto my Soul and now you've seen it, now I have nothing to hide. I may have the body of a cursed being, but my heart and my Soul is still that of a Human's. Now let's get going, the Daedric Lords are just up ahead."

And so, Delphine began to walk forward into the Hall and Ragnar and Iris began to follow her once more into the Castle. They continued to see the many paintings and many sculptures of Gods and Kings many centuries ago. And so, they saw before them the Door of the Throne Room that was at the end of this Hall that they were in. The Door was large and was twice as big than any ordinary Door that anyone has ever seen and it was very tall. Then, Delphine slowly opens the Door and it opens as slowly as possible and it began to make this creaking sound.

Then Ragnar, Iris and Delphine began to walk into the Throne Room and they see how magnificent

and large of a Room it was. And then, they see that Sheogorath the Emperor was sitting onto the Throne that was as big as any Throne could be. And so, Sheogorath walks towards the Three Hunters as they were once again prepared for yet another Battle. He was a very tall and powerful Daedra that carried a large Black Sword that carried the souls that fell on his Sword. "Sheogorath." Delphine said.

"The Ebony Warrior." He said.

"Your rule on this Earth is over." She said.

"...Because you say so?" Sheogorath asked.

"It ends...by my Blade."

"And it endures...by my Blade."

"I told you once, that I was here to put you down. I won't allow you to do this that you are doing. If you summon Satan, you will start a War on the world and Mankind."

"Foolish Warrior. War has already come to your people. A merciful War, only if they refuse to Bow their heads before him. What chances do you have against me? You could not stop me before."

"...I was alone, before."

Then as she said this, Ragnar and Iris are between Delphine as she was standing before Sheogorath the Emperor. Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he holds onto it as he is prepared to battle the strongest of the Daedric Lords. Iris also pulls

out her Bow and an Arrow and she is also holding onto them as she is prepared for this Battle. And finally, Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and her Sword flashes like lightning as she holds onto her Weapon. Sheogorath stares at Ragnar, Iris and Delphine as they are prepared for this Battle to commence in this Castle.

Then, Delphine points her Greatsword at Sheogorath and she charges quickly towards him and he backs up from her. And as he did this, two of his fingers were holding onto the tip of her Sword and she was trying to pull it back. His fingers were strong enough to prevent the tip of her Sword to move away from his presence of where he was standing. Then, Ragnar and Iris charges towards Sheogorath to defend themselves and Delphine as she was struggling to get away. Iris uses her Bow and Arrow and before she could get a clear shot, Ragnar charges towards Sheogorath and he slices him onto his chest.

Then, Sheogorath uses his elbow and he shoves Ragnar away from him and Ragnar suffered critical damage from the Daedric Lord's Attack. And then, Iris uses her Bow and Arrow and she aims and shoots at Sheogorath's head and the Arrows landed onto his head and arm. "Huntress." He said.

And then, Sheogorath uses his hand and he slaps Iris away from him and she falls down to the ground



and it left a mark on her face. Then, Ragnar gets himself up from the ground and he sees that Sheogorath was going towards Iris to kill her where she stood. "Iris!" He Shouted.

Ragnar lunges towards Sheogorath and he starts to punch him in the face multiple times but he could not feel any of Ragnar's punches. "You must be the Ranger." He said.

And after Ragnar punches him another time, Sheogorath delivers to him a stronger and powerful punch to his Stomach. Then he grabs Ragnar by the Throat and he starts to choke him as he was struggling to get away from him. "This is the end for you." He said.

Sheogorath lifts up his hand and before he was about to rip something out of Ragnar's body to kill him, Delphine's Greatsword goes through the both of Sheogorath's arms. Then, Iris gets up from the ground and she starts to aim and shoot at his face many more times before realizing that he is Arrow-proof. Then, Sheogorath back slaps Iris away from him and he punches Delphine up into the air. Then, Delphine gets herself up from the ground and she starts to use her hands to attack Sheogorath. She starts to deliver him punches and kicks to his face and to his chest to make him vulnerable.

It makes a few critical damages to his skull but not so much to his chest as he struggles to get himself away. Then, Sheogorath shoves Delphine away from him and she flies backward and falls down to the ground after being shoved. Then Iris aims and shoots at Sheogorath once more and this time it lands onto his body and it does some damage. And then, Ragnar holds onto his Greatsword and he starts to slash and dice Sheogorath up and now it felt like he was vulnerable. After delivering a few more slices onto his chest, Ragnar shoves his Greatsword deep into Sheogorath's chest and it went through his back.

Sheogorath falls down to the ground and he feels his own blood beginning to leave him and stain the ground. And then, he looks and he stares at Ragnar, Iris and Delphine as they walk towards him to finish him off and end his reign on this Earth.

## **CHAPTER 13: THE PATH AHEAD**

They have made it, Ragnar, Iris and Delphine made it towards the Kingdom of the Daedric Lords to end their reign on this Earth. For so long, they fought their way against the Demons of Hell and for many years they have lived in pain and torment. Delphine reveals to both Ragnar and Iris her true nature and dark power as her Soul is filled with Darkness and Death. This path that she walks is filled with vengeance and Blood and she always knew that she would never find peace. The Three Hunters come face

to face against Sheogorath the Emperor and the strongest of the Daedric Lords.

It has come to this very moment in the Turning of the age of which the Fate of the World hangs in the balance. The Daedric Lords have come to summon Satan so he could rule over all the Earth for all eternity. This will not Stop The Ebony Warrior, nor the skillful Huntress, not even the Ranger as they fight for their lives than live them. After they do this heavy burden, their Fates shall await them and they shall not resist their Fates of which they shall be given. The Path Ahead for them will be much difficult then expected and their greatest Battles shall be fought in time. Farewell, for now.

## I

Ragnar, Iris and Delphine back away slowly from Sheogorath as he is on the ground and his Blood beginning to leave him. His long nails scratch the solid ground which they stood upon as he is struggling for breath as he was stabbed. "Well played, Ranger," Sheogorath said. "Very well played. But I am no ordinary Daedra to be killed by your Mortal Skills and Magics. I am the greatest of the Daedra. I am the Emperor, Sheogorath. I am forever... I am the supreme

being that rules the Demons of Hell. AND I HAVE HAD ENOUGH!!"

Sheogorath pulls out his Daedric Greatsword and he lifts up into the air and he creates a Large Ball of Fire with his Blade. The Ball of Fire was very large and it lit a Green Flame with his Sword as it lit the entire room ablaze. And then, he casts this flame towards Ragnar, Iris and Delphine as they both witness this very thing before them. Ragnar and Iris back away from the Flame as it was coming slowly towards them all to burn them alive and not see the light of day. Then suddenly, Delphine uses her Greatsword and she pierces the Ball of Fire and it causes it to not move.

Her Sword can deflect anything that would come to bring her harm and of course, it stopped many Balls of Fire. She then pushes the Fireball with her Greatsword and then it began to move away from Ragnar and Iris. They could not believe whatever it was that they were seeing as Delphine was moving the Fireball with her Sword. The Fireball is then casted back towards Sheogorath as he sees that it is coming back towards him and it was coming quickly. And with his hands, he stops the Fireball in his grasp as Delphine was still pushing it back towards him.

The Fireball did not do that much damage nor even burn Sheogorath's hand as he was indeed fire-proof and could not die by fire. And then, Delphine

uses her Greatsword and she pushed the Ball of Fire further towards the Emperor and the force began to push him back. She pushed the Fireball with such strength inside of her as her Black Sword protected her from such things to take her down. Then, The Fireball explodes and she pushes Sheogorath further down and both him and Delphine were no longer in the Throne Room but in a Hallway. This Hallway was filled with Paintings and candles that lit everywhere and it was a very long Hallway.

Then, Sheogorath holds onto his Greatsword and he begins to charge against Delphine with all of his anger and all of his fury. And Delphine holds onto her Greatsword and she also charges against Sheogorath with all of the anger and rage inside of her. Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she also tries to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. Both Delphine's And Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning.

Again, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then again, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she also tries to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. And again,

both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Yet again, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then yet again, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she also tries to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks.

And yet again, both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Once more, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then Once more, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she also tries to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. And once more, both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Then suddenly, the battle ceased for a brief moment for they both stopped to catch their breaths to fight each other again.

"So, The Ebony Warrior has come again to send me back to Hell like she once did?" Sheogorath asked.

"I live to kill every last one of you Demons!" Delphine Answered, "I shall not stop while there is breath in my body."

## II

"Enough!" He said, "You will die for your blasphemy. Your Soul belongs to us!"

Then, the Battle commenced again and both of them held their Swords in their hands and are ready to strike each other down. Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. Both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Again, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks.

Then again, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. Both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Yet again, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then yet again, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. And yet again, both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be



clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning.

Once more, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then once more, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. And once more, both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Then suddenly, the battle ceased again for a brief moment as they both stare at each other for a long while.

"You admire us a lot, Ebony Warrior," Sheogorath said. "You want to know why? It's because you are determined to take us down and not run away like a coward."

"The Lords of Shadow could not hold me back," Delphine said. "The Grim Reaper could not take my Dark Soul from my body, and you could not claim me like you tried to do all those Years ago. I will destroy your kind, my Vengeance will be complete!"

"That's enough of this mindless banter!" He shouted, "You are the Ebony Warrior! I will not suffer you nor your Bloodline to live any Longer!"

Then, the Battle commenced yet again and both of them held their Swords in their hands and they both fight each other to the Death. Meanwhile, Ragnar and

Iris follow a different path to reach both Delphine and Sheogorath in this Dark Castle. The path was strung with Darkness and Death for all three of them as they were following this long Hallway. "We must find Delphine," Ragnar said. "She could be anywhere in this part of this cursed place!"

"Ragnar!" Iris Shouted, "I can hear them! The sounds of their Blades clashing with each other."

"Where are they?" He asked.

"That's what I'm trying to figure out!" She answered.

Then Suddenly, Ragnar and Iris began to hear not only the sounds of Swords clashing but they also began to hear the sounds of Demons Shrieking in the air. The Demons began to be crawling towards them and there began to be dark Beasts galloping in the Hallway And they began to make horrifying noises. Then, the Demons that were running towards them pulled out their Swords and their Axes and their Spears and they were pointing them at Ragnar and Iris. The Weapons that they carried were razor-sharp and were forged by them and few were filled with a Toxic Poison. And of course, they shrieked once more into the air as they were ready for a Battle.

"Iris, Stay behind me." Ragnar said.

"Alright," Iris said.

"Our only choice now is to fight our way to find Delphine in this Castle!" He said.

Then, Ragnar pulls out his Greatsword and he holds onto it and he points it at the Demons that were standing before him. Then, Iris also pulls out her Sword and she also points it at the Demons that were ready to cut them down. Then, Ragnar charges towards the Demons and he swings his Greatsword and he begins to kill every single one of the Demons that were before him. He blocks and he dodges each and every single one of the attacks that the Demons were throwing at him. Then, he uses his Greatsword and he cuts off their heads, he slices them in half and he cleaves them open all in brutal and violent manners.

Lots of Blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And so, Ragnar continues onward towards the Demons and nothing else ever stood in his way. And then, Iris charges towards the Demons and she swings her Sword and she also begins to kill every single one of the Demons that were before her. She blocks and she dodges each and every single one of the attacks that the Demons were throwing at her. Then, she uses his Sword and she cuts off their heads, she slices off their arms and their legs and she stabs them in their chests.

And as she swings her Sword at her enemies, the Blood of the Demons began to fall and leave their bodies and end up onto the ground. And so, Iris also continues onward towards the Demons and nothing else ever stood in her way. And after they finished battling those Demons, they continued to run forward and find Delphine. The Hallway was a very long room of which go on at what seemed like forever and it seemed like it never ended.

### III

Meanwhile, Delphine continues to battle the Emperor Sheogorath as he kept his distance and defended himself. Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. Both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Again, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks.

Then again, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. And again, both Delphine's and Sheogorath's

Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Yet again, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of her attacks. Then yet again, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. And yet again, both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning.

Once more, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then once more, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. And once more, both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Then suddenly, the battle ceased yet again, for Delphine slices Sheogorath onto his chest.

"You really think you can kill me?" Sheogorath asked, "You cannot even See inside of me. Nothing of my soul remains!"

"Then, your life is forfeit," Delphine said. "Find peace in death!"

"I am banished from Death!" He Shouted, "And bound to the Flames of Darkness. No matter how many

times you try, no matter how many battles you have with me, I Return more powerful than ever! I will hunt you down, even to the ends of the Earth, I will find you. I will not fail to drag you back to Hell!"

Then, the Battle commenced once more and both of them held onto their Swords and they were determined to fight each other. Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. Both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Again, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks.

Then again, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. And again, both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Yet again, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then yet again, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. And yet again, both

Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning.

Once more, Sheogorath charges towards Delphine and he uses his Greatsword and he tries to attack Delphine and she blocks all of his attacks. Then once more, Delphine swings her Greatsword and she begins to attack Sheogorath and he also blocks her attacks. And once more, both Delphine's and Sheogorath's Greatsword began to be clashing with each other, each blow was like a bolt of lightning. Then suddenly, Delphine uses her Greatsword and she slashes the Black Sword away from Sheogorath. And with all of her anger and all of her Strength and fury, Delphine stabs Sheogorath on his chest with her Large Sword.

And then, lots of his blood began to splatter all over the place and lots of his Gore began to stain the ground that they were standing on. And then, Delphine began to walk forward towards Sheogorath as he was kneeling down on the ground as his blood was leaving his body. "It's over, Sheogorath," Delphine said. "You are bested! Accept your defeat!"

"My will is strong, Ebony Warrior!" He said, "I have power beyond comprehension, I am immortal."

"I have defeated you, your Blood is leaving your body," she said. "You barely have enough strength to stand up and fight me!"

"Perhaps it is time that I reveal everything to you," Sheogorath said. "It is now time that I show you my true form and strength!"

Then, Sheogorath gets himself off from the ground and then he lifts up his hands and lightning began to emerge onto his hands and arms. As he looks up into the sky, his form began to grow darker and his armor began to be as dark and bleak as night. And then, he looked totally new and he was now wearing a Mask onto his face and it was made of Hellish Steel. He was indeed an opponent worthy to be feared by his enemies and he was truly one that defies Death. He then looks forward and he looks and stares at Delphine for a long while and He walks slowly towards her.

Delphine realizes this newer form of the Emperor for she saw him once and she battled him in an Age long past. "You... you are the one that I once fought," Delphine said. "You were the one that was with the Lords of Shadow. The one that flew atop the Earth... on that day."

"Yes... Ebony Warrior, it is I." Sheogorath said in a deranged and demonic voice.



## IV

Then, she remembers about the day when she fought the Last Lord of Shadow atop the Tower to the East. She realizes that it was he who flew into the World and breathes a Dark Flame which poisoned the World before her. "It cannot be," Delphine said. "You are none other than The Black Elder Dragon!"

"Now you begin to understand," Sheogorath said. "Yes, Delphine. It was I who casted the Spell that caused the Demons to roam this Earth. I knew this would force my brothers and sister in Heaven to contact the order here on Earth. The prophecy was their little ray of Hope in the Darkness!"

"We Daedric Lords, as you call us, have been impudent for far too long... fixed in an uneasy truce for many centuries; each possessing our share of the power, but each unable to have mastery over the others. Until now. I grew so weary of these years of proliferation. A constant truce between the four of us. Each unwilling to concede or co-operate with the others. They were too blind to see the potential in the power we held... if only it were combined... I desired that ultimate power and was prepared to probe the very depths of Hell in search of knowledge to acquire it.

"I fought hordes of Demons and I grew much more powerful. But then, a strange thing covered my very soul and it took me within and the power that I held had a will of its own. I fell and I joined the Darkness that I had sought to destroy. For many millennia, I ruled on the Throne as the King of the Daedric Lords and I soared the very Heavens that were above me. I have used the Sheer force of Will to have as my own and keep as those who have challenged me to the fullest, and you have been the perfect dupe!

"Of course, I aroused my suspicions as I held this power before me and used it as my own. Me having power and dominion over my enemies and you... my Shining Knight!"

And then, both Delphine and Sheogorath looked and they both stared at each other for a long while before any of them could say or do anything else. "I will not allow you to stand in my way, Sheogorath!" Delphine said.

"Oh, I knew you would say something like that," He said. "But you should know this, like you I had a Destiny to fulfill and yet I abandoned it once, a lifetime ago. I did not do so again, for living life to the fullest was never my calling nor my purpose in this life. I chose the life of a Warrior who's power had Dominion over others and I ensured that my World was restored

to life, not darkness. But, a Man that I once called a Brother, came and took the Throne for his own and he wiped out everyone that I ever knew.

"And so, he shunned me out and he shamed me and my companions. He killed my Wife and he burned down my Home. I never forgave him, and I knew that Darkness was already in me... the Blood of the Daedra was already in my veins. My God has abandoned me and there was no peace for me, no cure... no healing... there was nothing left for me. And so, I no longer sought the Help of the one that I once served and I used that Darkness and Killed that one that cursed me.

"And in time, as I ruled on the Throne as King of the Daedric Lords, I soared the Heavens as the Black Elder Dragon. The Armor that you wear will do it for me... just like the Armor that I wear for myself."

Then, Delphine looks down at her Armor and she gazes at the entirety of her Armor as it was stronger than Steel. She gazes at her Gauntlets which she wore and down at her boots which were very Metallic and Thicker than any ordinary Armor.

"I told you," Sheogorath said. "Dark Power is my Dominion, forged in the Pits of Hell no less. Forged by the Power and the Will of Satan."

"That's not possible," Delphine said. "I don't believe you."

"That is why you are what you have always been," He said. "Those who have the Blood of Daedra running in their veins already knows that the Darkness has overclouded them. They are bound for Hell for all eternity, God has surely abandoned those who yield to Darkness. The Afterlife brings them nothing more but Death, Anguish and Despair. That... is the price of those who fight against the Demons."

Then, Delphine reminds herself about Ragnar and Iris and the Fate of which will soon come for the both of them. She does not realize how dark or how awful it will be when the Fate has come before them and they must accept it.

"No," Delphine said. "No."

"Oh, that Ranger and that helpless and hapless Huntress," Sheogorath said. "Such poor souls of the living. And yet, they trusted you to the very end. You have led them both here and now they are ready to see Satan be Summoned from Hell. Yes, Delphine... now you begin to understand, it is you who would have the same fate of that Man who once followed you will happen to those two."

"NO... Shut Up!" Delphine Shouted, "You're a Liar... you Lie!"

"Yes, look further into your Soul Delphine... you know it to be true," he said. "There is a terrible Darkness inside of you, my friend. You are Cursed to

Walk the Earth until the Great Evil is Destroyed. The Devil will have his Due, your soul is Damned. The Devil and his Servants will NOT fail to drag you back to Hell!

"Indeed, God sees you for what you are. A merciless, Helpless Woman... beyond Redemption... beyond Hope!"

## V

Then, Delphine pulls out her Greatsword and she charges forward towards Sheogorath and she lets out a loud scream of anger and rage against him. And as she tries to deliver an Attack towards him, Sheogorath stops her and it forces her to not move a muscle. She could not move anywhere or even try to run away, the Emperor's hand forces her to stop moving. "Did you forget who I am, Ebony Warrior?" He asked, "I am eternal, I am the Dragon... Sheogorath.

"I am the King of the Daedric Lords. I am and will always be the Supreme Being that rules alongside Satan. I am forever, I am invincible... I AM THE ULTIMATE POWER!!"

Sheogorath then sees something raging in Delphine's eyes as she struggles to get towards him to kill him. Her Eyes and her face were full of Anger and She Struggles as hard as possible to lay a single scratch onto the Emperor's Body. She walks slowly but firmly

to reach the Emperor that was using his hand to make her stop coming to him. Her Hands are onto the handle of her Blade as the tip draws closer to Sheogorath's chest to stab him where he stood. Then suddenly, Sheogorath uses his mind and he caused Delphine to fly backwards away from him and she lands onto the ground.

Then, she slowly gets herself up from the ground and she continues to stare onward at Sheogorath as her anger and Rage were Hot against him. She was now twice as determined to put him out of his Misery even in his strongest form yet. And then, she charges quickly towards him again and her blade was pointed at him and she was ready to finish him. But then, Sheogorath uses his hand and he punches the ground below him and it causes Delphine to fall backwards again. She could feel her own head throbbing and all she could ever hear was the sound of Death coming straight for her.

Sheogorath's hand began to make everything around them vibrate and he moves even closer towards Delphine as she could not move at all. His power and his will is twice as strong as Delphine's and not even the power that she had could protect herself.

"It is over, submit to your Destiny!" Sheogorath said, "You will fall... your Death is on its way."

Sheogorath places his hand onto Delphine's smooth and soft face as she stares deep at his eyes which were that of a creature's eye. Delphine began to feel herself changing and her eyes began to glow and she began to feel herself fading away from existence. Then suddenly, Ragnar and Iris found them as they were standing beside a large Alter made to Summon Satan from his Throne. They both see that Delphine was on the ground and she could not move anywhere for Sheogorath was dominating her. Then Iris pulls out her Bow and Arrow and she aims and shoots at his Chest and the Arrow doesn't land onto him but it does make him fall back a bit.

He began to realize that it did only a slight bit of damage onto his Chest but it wasn't anything Major or critical. Then, Ragnar charges towards Sheogorath and he pulls out his Greatsword and he slices him onto his body and he was falling back a bit from him. He continued to slice Sheogorath everywhere on his body until he fell to the ground and looked at the Ceiling. Ragnar did not check to see if he was alright or not, and so, he runs quickly towards Delphine to see if she was alright. She began to come back to her senses after she was gasping for breath and was trying to see what was happening.

"Ragnar?" Delphine asked.

"It's alright, Delphine." Ragnar answered. "I've come to help you, can you get up?"

"Yes, I think so." She answered.

"Take my hand!" He said.

Ragnar lets out his right hand to Delphine to help her off from the ground so that she can stand again and fight. She lets out her right hand and she takes his hand and she lets both of her hands go onto Ragnar's right hand. And before any of them could do or say anything else, Ragnar feels a Blade come through the side of his Arm and the side of his Chest. Delphine lets out a great gasp and Iris stares at him and she covers both of her mouths and she starts shaking in fear. Delphine stares onward as Ragnar feels this large Black Blade enter deep into him and he lets go of her.

They all realize that Sheogorath is the one who stabbed Ragnar and he pulls the Sword out from his body. So much Blood began to come out from Ragnar's arm and it began to stain the solid ground which they stood upon. Then, Ragnar turns around and he sees Sheogorath in his almighty and most powerful form in all of his glory. Ragnar tried to fight back against Sheogorath, but he was too strong for him and he tries to deliver many more attacks. But then, Sheogorath lifts up his Sword and he slices him onto his Stomach and he slices him many times his back.



And as he was onto the ground, Sheogorath was about to deliver one last slash onto his body to finish him off. Then, Iris charges over to Sheogorath and she lifts up the Dagger that Ragnar gave to her as a gift to protect her. And then, she goes over and she starts stabbing him multiple times onto his back and it was super Effective. And then, as Sheogorath was gonna do something to her, Iris lifts up the Dagger and she stabs him onto his eye. Then, she pulls out the Dagger and his whole eyeball was stuck onto the Dagger and he began to feel pain.

## VI

Then, Sheogorath lifts up his hand and he slaps her away from him and she fell down onto the Solid ground. The slap left another mark onto her face and she still held the Dagger onto her hands but she could not get up from the ground. Ragnar gets up from the ground for he was not done with this Battle yet for everyone was on the ground feeling weary and defeated. Even though he had lots of scars onto him, he was not done with this Battle and had to finish it no matter the cost. And then, he charges over to Sheogorath and he swings his Greatsword and he starts defending himself and he starts delivering attacks to him.

He swings his Greatsword and he starts slicing him everywhere again and the attacks didn't do any sort of Damage on him. And then, Delphine gets up from the ground and she drives her Greatsword into Sheogorath's Chest once again. And as he started to feel pain, Sheogorath tries to escape and his Sword was clashing with Ragnar's Sword. Delphine tries to make sure that her Entire Blade is shoved into Sheogorath's body so he could fully be disabled. And as Ragnar was about to deliver another strike on him, Sheogorath's Sword clashes with Ragnar's Greatsword and it was strong enough that it flew away from Ragnar's hand.

Ragnar's Greatsword now had a huge crack on it and it looked like it was ready to crumble into many pieces. And then, Sheogorath lifts up his hand and he punches Ragnar in the face and it was so powerful that he fell down backwards. Then, he goes towards Delphine and he punches her in her stomach and he punches her onto her face. All of the Three Hunters could not even get themselves up and none of them could ever withstand against Sheogorath. He took twice as much damage than any of them did and he felt his own Blood leaving him.

Then, he pulls out Delphine's large Sword that pierced him on his Chest and he slowly pulls it out from his body and he throws it towards Delphine.

Once again, he began to feel his own blood leaving his body as he struggled to keep himself awake and alive. Then, he feels his face and his body being all bloodied up and he was stabbed all over his back from Ragnar's Dagger that Iris held onto. His whole Left Eyeball was taken out and his whole face was covered in His Blood and his Gore was stained onto himself. Then, Sheogorath goes towards the Alter which he fought against the Three Hunters as they fought for their lives against him.

The Alter was a very large Alter and it was, of course, built by none other than the Demons and it was made with Metal to hold it together. Then, Sheogorath lets out a sinister Laugh in believing that he won this Battle between him against Ragnar, Iris and Delphine. But it was also a laugh of anger and yet contempt for his three Enemies which were on the floor feeling Humiliated that they couldn't get up. Then, a large and Dark yet very sinister voice began to speak to Sheogorath, saying, "Hail, mighty Sheogorath."

"Who's there... who...?" Sheogorath asked.

"Don't you remember me?" The voice asked, "I came to you in the void. I granted you knowledge and power. Power that you could never have achieved on your own. Surely, you haven't forgotten?"

"In fact, I planted the idea for this whole elaborate ruse into your tiny mind in order to serve my own higher purpose. I no longer need your assistance. The power is now mine!"

And then, Sheogorath began to light on Fire and his whole body was covered in fiery flames and it came unexpectedly. "NO, NOOOOOOOO!!" He Shouted.

Sheogorath's entire body began to wither away and he felt his own body losing strength and he was clueless on what was going on or how this happened. And then, he fell down to the ground and he was dead, the fire continued to set ablaze onto his cold body as he lay there. And so Sheogorath, the Black Elder Dragon, the King of the Daedric Lords is no more and his whole body continued to burn away until he was covered in nothing but Ashes. His Ashes then, withered onto the Alter and his Blood Covers The Metal which holds it all together. Then, a large bright light began to blow and the Three Hunters covers their eyes and once again, they began to feel the Earth shake around them.

And out from the light came a large person with large Raven Black Wings attached to his back and his hair is long and white as snow. He had Red Eye color and his Pupils were like the Eyes of a God and his form was all-powerful and all-fearful in appearance. He was none other than Satan and he walks off from the Alter

and he lands onto the ground and he looks and stares at the Three Hunters for a long while. "Who are you?" Iris asked.

"It cannot be, Is it truly you?" Ragnar asked.

"Without a doubt," Delphine answered them.

"It's him... Satan."

"Well met, Ranger... Huntress... Ebony Warrior." Satan said. "You have gotten stronger than I have expected. So you have slain many Demons before you? You truly are worthy opponents to be feared by many."

Then, Delphine gets up from the ground and she picks up her Greatsword and she points it towards Satan. "You got some nerve for coming back here." She said. "You just don't know when to give up, do you?"

And then, Delphine charges quickly towards Satan and she raises her Greatsword and she lands an attack on Satan but he blocks the attack with his Greatsword. Satan wielded a large Black Sword from the bones of an Elder Dragon and it was forged in the pits of Hell.

## VII

Then, Satan lifts up his Greatsword and he lands an attack on Delphine and it pushes her back and she falls down to the ground. The attack was super

effective on her and she struggled to get herself back up to fight Satan as he stood there. And then, Ragnar gets himself up from the ground and he goes to attack Satan as Delphine watches him in shock. "Ragnar, No!" She Shouted.

Ragnar lifts up his Greatsword and he lands an attack on Satan but he also blocks the attack with his Greatsword. Then, Satan goes over to him and he punches him in the face and Ragnar also falls down to the ground. Delphine sees that Ragnar's Sword was already getting ready to crack and never to be used again for the attack that Satan used was very powerful. Then, Delphine gets back up as Ragnar also gets himself up and being ready to land more attacks on Satan. "Stay back, Ragnar!" Delphine shouted.

And then, as Delphine charges over to Satan to land another attack on him, Satan blocks the attack and he pushes her over again. Both his Sword and Delphine's Sword were clashing with each other and Delphine was keeping her distance as Satan began to speak to her, saying, "Defeating you like this has no meaning."

"Come on, Satan. It's time to end this!" Delphine said.

Then, Satan looks and he stares at Delphine for a short while and sees that she is ready to finish him off.

"Heal your wounds, Delphine," Satan said. "Get strong. After that, we shall settle the matter."

And then, Satan lands an attack on Delphine as he swings his Greatsword and she is forced backwards from him, but she keeps her distance once again. "I warn you all," Satan said. "You still have much to learn besides killing Demons. You have no idea of the true power a mighty Warrior can wield."

Then, Satan's Greatsword began to light on fire, the fire was red and its flames began to spread all over the Sword. "This place is beyond you," He said. "You have no power here. And it is only a matter of time before the Earth is also mine, I already control the minds of its people. Soon my Kingdom in the land called Apocrypha will be complete and I shall rule the World of Men.

"Soon, I will come for my Father in Heaven. Before the end, he will bow down to me!" And then, the Walls of the Castle explodes and a large Ancient Dragon comes before them all in its glory. "You will all be sent back to where you came from," He said. "You all can await my Kingdom with the rest of the World."

Then, Satan spreads out his wings and he lands onto the Dragon and they all watch as he flies away from them. Ragnar, Iris and Delphine began to realize that they had failed to stop the Daedric Lords and they

realize that they lost. "What just happened?" Iris asked.

"Don't tell me... that they just... it cannot be." Ragnar said weakly.

"...They've done it." Delphine said. "We could not stop them. They summoned their father. They brought mighty Lucifer out of his hole and he now roams this World."

Then Ragnar and Iris both stare at Delphine as she said this to them and they were all shocked and could not believe how and why this happened. Then, they began to hear the Castle's walls crumbling and the whole place began to shake around them.

"Ragnar... Iris!" Delphine Shouted. "We need to move, now!"

And then, they both follow Delphine out of the Alter Room and they were on their way out of this wretched place. As they ran, Ragnar began to feel very weak inside and he was running out of breath as he felt his own body. Iris started to feel very worried about Ragnar once again and she did not know what was happening to him. Delphine intended to make sure that both Iris and Ragnar kept up with her as they run out from the crumbling walls of the Castle. As they ran, they began to see many corpses of Demons lying all over the place and they see many severed arms, legs, and heads all over the ground as they saw them.



And so, they made it out of the Castle which was now crumbling down into ashes and the Moon was leaving their sight. As they were walking, Ragnar began to feel much weaker and felt badly than before and his head began to throb. "Ragnar, are you okay?" Delphine asked, "You feel awful."

"Yes... I... I'm just fine." Ragnar answered.

"Hey, we're going to find a place to rest for a while." She said, "Can you make it?"

"Of... of course... I... can." He said.

Then, Iris was worried about Ragnar as well for she did not see so much pain in him than before and she was still more concerned about him than Delphine. "Ragnar? Ragnar what's wrong?" Iris asked.

Then, Ragnar started to cough and he started to feel twice as much pain than before and he started to feel dizzy and he felt like he was about to fade away. "It's... its... nothing." He said.

Then, Ragnar looks up at the sky and he begins to see many Demons flying up in the air, and he realizes that he has failed. And they all see Satan riding on top of the Ancient Dragon in the Skies and he looks down at the Lands of the Earth. Because of his dizziness, Ragnar closes his eyes and he falls down to the ground and he was unconscious. Then, Iris and Delphine goes towards Ragnar and they see that he

has fainted and they try to wake him up. "Ragnar!" Delphine Shouted.

"Hey, Ragnar... Ragnar get up!" Iris Shouted. Then, Iris starts to shake Ragnar and she struggles to get him up for she was also feeling a lot of pain on her face.

## VIII

"Ragnar... Ragnar, can you hear me?!" Iris Shouted again.

Then, Delphine goes over to Ragnar and she starts to feel him and she bends over to his Chest to check his heartbeat. She closes her eyes and she feels his heartbeat and thankfully, Ragnar's Heart was still beating inside of him. "He is still breathing." She said.

Then as Iris gets herself up from the ground, she looks down at her hand and she sees so much Blood stained on her hand. "Oh God!" She said.

"What is it?" Delphine asked.

"Ragnar... he's bleeding." Iris answered.

"What?" Delphine asked again.

Delphine sees Ragnar's stomach and it had a huge scar on it and it was covered in Blood and it began to leave his body. So much of Ragnar's Blood began to leave him and it began to stain both his

Armor and the ground. Then Delphine says to Iris, "We have to get him out of here. Now!"

"Where will we go?" Iris asked.

"I do not know, we have to find a place and find someone, perhaps they could help us!" Delphine Answered.

"Will he make it through all of this?" Iris asked.

Delphine answers Iris, saying, "We have to try. Come on, we have to hurry!"

Then, Delphine takes off her cape and she wraps it around Ragnar and then she picks him up from the ground. Delphine walks in front of Iris while carrying Ragnar and Iris follows her and they were on their way elsewhere. And as they walked, they began to see many Demons going out into the World and flying in the Skies above. They began to realize that the time of Darkness descends, a new age has begun for all of the world to witness. An Age when every darkness shall eclipse light and the moon shall cover the face of the sun, and an Age where Men will afterwards call it, "The Age of Darkness".

While the Demons flew themselves across the Earth, spreading terror to all of the people, Delphine carries Ragnar who is now brutally injured to someplace that might help them. Delphine and Iris found a house in the forest, a Blacksmith's House that was in a short forest behind it. Iris knocks the door for

someone to open it for them as Delphine held Ragnar in her grasp and didn't let go of him. "Is anyone in there?!" Delphine asked, "Open the Door, we need your help!"

Then, a person peeps through the door to see who it is, it was the blacksmith that lived here, his name is Gunmar. "Who calls?" He asked.

"We are in need of your assistance and it is urgent that you answer the door!" Delphine answered.

"Very well then." Gunmar said. And so, he answers the door and he becomes shocked at what he was looking at, for Delphine is carrying Ragnar who was badly injured from the last battle.

"Please, our friend is badly wounded and there is no other place that we can take him." Delphine said.

"Come with me!" Gunmar said. He leads Delphine and Iris to a large table to lay Ragnar down on and he sees that Ragnar has many wounds inflicted onto him. "I will get the bandages to aid this man, how long has he been like this?" He asked.

Iris answers Gunmar, saying, "He hasn't spoken a word ever since he got that wound, we carried him for probably about an Hour trying to search for someone."

"Is he still alive?" Gunmar asked.

"He is, But I don't know how long he will last." Delphine said.

Then, Gunmar searches his home for the bandages and Medicine for Ragnar, then he came back to him with the items in his hands. "Take off his Armor, he won't be needing it right now." He said.

Then, Delphine went over to Ragnar and she took off his Armor and placed his Weapons on the floor beside the Table. Then, Gunmar used his medicine and he rubs it onto Ragnar's wound, he then uses his bandages and he wraps it all over Ragnar's body. He also goes over to Ragnar and he feels his heartbeat to make sure that he is still alive. "He is still alive, but he needs rest, a very long one." He said. "Until the wound inflicted on his body has been dealt with, I'm afraid he must not move at all from his resting place. Come with me, I know where we can lay him."

Gunmar leads the way and Delphine picks up Ragnar and she follows him and Iris goes and follows them as well. He leads them to the hills behind his house, and he leads them to a cave that was behind his house. Delphine lays Ragnar's body on the Bed that was inside of that cave and she lays him gently there and she stares at Gunmar. And he spoke to them, saying, "This Man must've been from some terrible Battle, and you girls have led him here to me for my assistance and so I have. Let this man rest for now, come to me if you have need for anything."

Then, Gunmar goes back to his home and Iris and Delphine stay and watch Ragnar for a long moment and not move anywhere. Then Iris gets closer towards Ragnar, she gets closer to him to touch him and see if he'll wake up. But as she tries to put a single hand onto him, Delphine puts her hand on Iris's shoulder and stops her from doing it. "Do not touch him, Iris." She said, "You heard that Man, Ragnar must rest from that Battle."

Iris says to her, "If... if only he could just listen to me, if he can even speak."

Then, Delphine looks and stares at Iris for a long while for she began to see something different about her.

## IX

Delphine says to her, "You have been acting differently, Iris. What has gotten into you? Ever since that Battle you had when you were alone with Ragnar, you have changed."

Then, Iris says to her, "Yes, I have changed. When Ragnar took me and trained me to be a Hunter, I could feel a sudden shift in the wind."

"What was it?" Delphine asked.

Then, Iris replied, "Ever since then, I needed someone... someone to show me my place in all of this."

When I was a child, my family told me nothing, they kept away all of their secrets, so I knew nothing about this World. And then Ragnar came, he came and I followed him and I wanted to see what the World is like before me."

"So, he came and showed you, has he not?"

"Yes, he has. But other than that, he protects me, he keeps getting hurt, he keeps spilling his own Blood, because of me."

Then, Delphine walks towards Iris and then she wraps her arms around Iris and she hugs her for a long time.

Iris asked her, "Delphine, what are you doing?"

Delphine said to her, "Iris, this path he walks is Vengeance, he will never find peace. I know this, I have seen it before my very eyes, I have experienced this."

"Delphine?" Iris asked.

Delphine answered her, "Iris... he and I share the same fate."

"What?"

Then, Delphine lets go of Iris and she stands before her and she starts to have a Dark feeling inside of her. A Dark thing started to corrupt her mind as she tried to come to terms with what she was trying to say.

Delphine said to Iris, "Iris, I have already told you about my cursed past. I cannot even hide myself

away from the Darkness that has clouded my mind. I live to fight the Demons of Hell and I will not Die under their rule. I live to ensure that the Earth is restored to light and not darkness. I do not know how long it will take for me to make sure that the Darkness I have sought to destroy is gone forever.

"Who I was is not who you will be. Iris, you will be the Huntress that you choose to be. You must be better than me and you must not fear the Darkness. You understand that, don't you? I will never forgive what the Demons have done to me. This Beast inside of me may not be able to destroy them, but I'll see to it that I destroy everything they built.

"Understand this, Iris: no longer shall I tremble down and cower in fear. No longer shall I hide in the Shadows and wait for the Devil himself to drag me down to Hell. Nay... the path I tread is paved with Blood and Darkness. No longer shall I allow anyone whom I care for be left behind to be devoured by those wretched creatures. This path is of my choosing... you must not allow yourself to be found in the path that I have chosen. You will do whatever I say to you, and you must not abandon the path you chose for yourself."

Then, Delphine stopped talking for a moment and Iris stood there feeling sorrowful for Delphine after she told her these things. Then, Delphine turns



around and she looks at Iris and she says to her, "Let's walk outside, Iris. Let's not disturb Ragnar while he sleeps."

Then, Iris and Delphine walked outside for a moment and then Iris stares at Delphine and she says to her, "Tell me, is this how it will be for all of us, for me? Tell me, I need to know!"

Delphine answered and said to her, "No... it will not. I told you long ago that we are the people we choose to be, we are the ones who will not repeat the mistakes that people made in the Days of Old. You as a Huntress, you must walk in the ways of the Hunter, hunting down the wildlife and let the men bask in your Tales of Triumph. Ragnar as a Ranger, he must walk in the ways of a Ranger, if he wants to survive in the Lands especially in times like this, he must experience all things... the good and the bad. And me as The Ebony Warrior, I shall wipe away the Great Evil of this Earth, and with my strength and with my power, I will wipe out from the Earth all of those who defy God."

Delphine then looks upwards to the Sky as it was Morning and the Moon was already gone from the Sky. She continues to speak, saying, "Though I walk through the Valley of the Shadow of Death, I will fear no Evil, for he is with me, his Rod and his Staff, they comfort me. He prepares a Table before me in the presence of my Enemies, he anoints my Head with Oil,

my cup runs over. Surely, goodness and mercy shall follow me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the House of the Lord forever."

And then, Delphine said nothing more for she didn't have anymore things to say to Iris as they were walking outside. Then, Delphine turned around and she looked at Iris and she said to her, "Let's go, we too must rest for our last Battle left us very weary."

And they go back to Gunmar's House and they stay there for the time being for it was already Morning when they arrived there. Iris sees that Delphine's Soul is weary and troubled and she saw no light in the Darkness as she fought her way against the Demons. However, Delphine truly believed that there is light for a look at the Savior and life be more abundant and free. She didn't know of the Day that would come when she would walk out of the Darkness and find her freedom.

## X

And so, Iris and Delphine found themselves a place to rest in Gunmar's Home And they stayed there all Morning and all Afternoon. About three days have passed since Satan rose from the Depths of Hell and began his reign on the Earth. Three Days have passed and the People were worried about what has

happened to everything around them. Sleepless Nights have surely begun on the Earth and Satan sent forth his Armies and they have begun to spread his name across the Earth. And the people once again fought for their lives against the Creatures of the Night and they will fight on to the Death against them.

Meanwhile, Ragnar slowly opens his eyes and he looks around and he did not know where he was or how he came here. Then, he sees Delphine looking at him and she was sitting down beside him to make sure that he is still alive. She did not have her Armor on and her Weapons were at the Blacksmith's House and Iris was asleep during this time. "Hey?" She asked.

"Delphine?" Ragnar asked.

Delphine said to him, "You're finally awake, you've been asleep for three days."

"Three days, where am I?" He asked her.

"You're in a Cave behind the Hills near the house that we took you to."

"You carried me all the way over here?"

"There was no other choice I had, I could not just leave you out to die. You passed out because of your injuries from that last battle, you needed rest."

"Rest... is that so?"

Then, Ragnar sits himself up quickly and he looks at Delphine and he was confused yet distressed

at what was happening. Then, Delphine says to him, "Hey, you shouldn't move yet! Your Wounds haven't..."

Before she could say anything else, Ragnar grabs her by her shoulders and he pulls her towards him and he had a Temper grow inside of himself. "Iris... what happened to Iris?!" He Shouted.

Delphine answered and said to him, "Iris is fine, she is in good shape. Let me go!"

"Where is she?" Ragnar asked.

Delphine said to him, "She's asleep at that House."

Then, Ragnar understands what Delphine said to him and his Temper leaves him and he takes his hands off of Delphine and she slowly backs up from him. Then, Ragnar gets himself up from the Bed and he stands up and he felt some strength come back into him. He then looks around for a bit to come back to his senses and he walks towards Delphine and he stands in front of her. "Where's my Armor... and what happened to my Sword?" He asked.

Delphine answered and said to him, "Your Sword... is shattered."

Delphine stands there for a moment and then, she pulls out his Greatsword and she shows it to him so he could know what happened to it. Ragnar Holds his Sword for a while for he had it for so long and

finally it was shattered and it could no longer be used in Battle. "And my Armor?" He asked.

Delphine said to him, "It fell apart and it is broken, it cannot be of use to you anymore."

Then, Ragnar stands there for a moment and then he looks down at the ground and he was silent and bitter. Delphine could see the depression and disappointment in Ragnar's eyes for his Armor and his Sword were all broken. Delphine goes over to him and she puts her left hand onto Ragnar's right Arm and she holds onto it. Delphine said to him, "I'm sorry."

Ragnar said to her, "No... this is my doing. It's because of me, it's because of the Path that I have chosen... we have failed to defeat them all. I'm just a spineless Coward who left his own family in pursuit of a purpose in life. I'm just someone who was found by someone else who knew much more about the World than anyone else did. I do not deserve you, Delphine... nor Iris, I'm a Failure."

Ragnar turns his back on her and he looks away from her and he stares at the Walls of the Cave in full silence. He regretted everything that he had ever done in this life and he believed he has lost all hope and lost any reason to live. Then, Delphine goes over to him again and she puts her Smooth and soft hand onto his Arm again. She was here to give him comfort and she was here to aid him as he was here all by himself in the

Darkness. Ragnar turns around and he looks and stares at Delphine and he waited for her to do something to him.

And so, Delphine puts her Hand onto his Shoulder and she leans over to him and without hesitation and without question, she gives him a Kiss on his Cheek. Ragnar began to feel a bit better than before and he began to realize that Delphine is showing him Love after she kissed him. Then, she wraps both of her Arms around Ragnar and she gives him a Hug as he was standing here before him. Ragnar then realized that both Delphine and Iris love him and they would do anything to help him in his greatest hour of need.

Delphine said to him, "You are no Fool, Ragnar. You are no Coward... and never have I considered you as a Failure. I know exactly who you are, you're a Ranger... nothing more and nothing less. I will remain with you and I will be by your side until the End. I would rather Die than watch you be devoured by them."

Then, Ragnar looks at Delphine for a while and he said to her, "We must go further, Delphine. We must fight on against the Demons until we draw our last Breath."

Delphine says to him, "I know. The Lands are Dangerous now, far more Dangerous than you can

ever imagine. There are more Demons than anyone could ever count, the risk is too great, if you even set foot before them you will be begging to regret your decision."

Ragnar said to her, "Have you forgotten our part in this life? Even if you have, I have not. I will not kill those Monsters in fear. I have abandoned my Destiny once, I will not do so again."

And then, Delphine takes her arms off of Ragnar and she looks and stares at him for a long while as he thinks of something. He sits down onto the Bed and Delphine sits down next to him and her hand was onto his Hand. "Is Iris still asleep?" Ragnar asked.

Delphine answered and said to him, "It's almost the middle of the Day, she should be awake by now. She must be having something to eat."

"That's good." Ragnar said.

Delphine then thought about it for a second and then, she said to Ragnar, "You worry about Iris, don't you?"

Ragnar said to her, "Of course I Do. She is young and I must protect her from any harm. If she is to survive in this World, then she must know what the consequences are when she is by herself in these Lands."

"I understand." Delphine said.

## XI

"So, the person you took to me is a Blacksmith?" Ragnar asked.

"Yes." Delphine answered.

Ragnar said to her, "Good, when I am out there I will need Armor and a new Sword by my side, I will also need Arrows and a new Bow. I will protect Iris no matter the cost and I will make sure that you as well are not in Harm's way."

Delphine said to him, "I understand, I appreciate that you wish to protect me. And I shall protect you as well, even during a time such as this."

Then, Ragnar goes over to Delphine and he says to her, "Delphine... you and Iris, you two are the closest things that I've ever had to friends. I am glad that I am on your Side and nobody else's. You may have a Dark Soul, but there is something in you that is pure and I know that you can find peace in the end. So... can I still follow you?"

Delphine answered and said to him, "Of course. Of course you can, I've never stopped wanting you to. As long as I have breath in my body, my Fate is my own."

Then, Ragnar sits besides her again and he lays his head onto her shoulder and she could feel his warm skin onto her Soft and smooth body. He was still



a bit sore on his body and Delphine held onto him and she started scratching his head and she puts her hand on his Shoulder. And then, Delphine lifted up her head to the Sky and she closes her eyes and she began to sing, softly:

*The Savior is Waiting to enter your Heart  
Why don't you let him come in?  
There's nothing in this World to keep you  
Apart.*

*What is your Answer to Him?*

*Time after Time, He has waited before  
And now He is waiting again,  
To see if you're willing to open the Door  
Oh, how he wants to come in.*

*If you'll take one step towards the Savior, my  
friend,*

*You'll find his Arms open wide.  
Receive Him, and all of your Darkness will  
end,*

*Within your Heart He'll abide.*

*Time after Time, He has waited before  
And now He is waiting again,  
To see if you're willing to open the Door*

*Oh, how he wants to come in.*

And so, Delphine finished her singing and Ragnar began to feel much better in the inside of his body as Delphine sings to him. Then, Iris comes inside and she began to see that Ragnar was fully awake and he felt much better. "Ragnar?" Iris asked.

"Hello, Iris." Ragnar said.

Then, without hesitation, Iris rushes over to Ragnar and she gives him a big Hug and she does not let go. Ragnar begins to see that Iris was shedding many tears of relief that he was still alive and he was fully rested. Iris says to him, "Oh, Ragnar... I never thought you would ever wake up. Ever since you were injured, awful things start occurring one after another. Ragnar, please... don't scare me like that!"

Ragnar, therefore, said to her, "It's alright, Iris. There is nothing for you to fear anymore. I'm here, and I will always be right here when you need me."

Then, Ragnar looks up at Delphine and he says to her, "Delphine, can you wait outside? I have very important things to say to Iris."

Delphine says to him, "Very well, Ragnar. I'll wait for you outside." Then, Delphine gets herself up and she starts walking outside from the Cave and she leaves both Ragnar and Iris alone.

Then Iris says to Ragnar, "Ragnar, I have something to say to you."

"What do you want?" He asked.

"Is it true what you are saying, are you leaving us, all by yourself?" Iris asked.

Ragnar answered and said to her, "Yes."

"You mean to go out there... all alone?"

"I'm sorry."

Iris then stood there for a long while and then she said to him, "That doesn't explain anything! I... I don't know what to do without you! Why would you leave us even at a time like this, can't you see it's not fair?"

Ragnar says to her, "Nothing about our lives have been fair, Iris. This is the path that I have chosen for myself. I gave my life to this War, I have lived almost my whole life to fight these Demons. I have lived as a Warrior, I have feared the creatures of the Night. And by paying the ultimate sacrifice, I had been denied my Vengeance."

## XII

Iris said to him, "Delphine said that with Vengeance inside of you, you will never find peace."

Ragnar said to her, "Then Delphine well-informed you. I have never lived in peace, I have

always lived as a Wanderer, seeking my purpose while destroying my enemies and saving my people. But everyone I ever knew, everyone I ever loved... were all gone astray and they were all gone, because of my desire for Vengeance. I have fought this War... alone."

Iris said to him, "Ragnar, you're not alone."

Therefore, Ragnar said to her, "I have already made up my mind on this matter... the risk is too great but I cannot stay here for now, no place in this World is safe. I shall fight on, never again will I turn back to my past and remember the days of great darkness and evil tidings. I am indeed a Ranger that hunts and kills his enemies by the Sword. I am glad-hearted in Battle and I bring Judgment to those who wish to change things around here. I am a Warrior that fights on to the End. I have never feared my enemies, and Death has never frightened me."

And then, Ragnar looks and he stares at Iris for a long while before any of them could say or do anything else. Iris stares at Ragnar in shock and fear for she couldn't believe the powerful words that Ragnar spoke with her. Ragnar then goes in front of her and he walks beside her to leave her but Iris chases after him to stop him. Iris then holds her Arms out and she wraps her arms around Ragnar and she hugs him and then she begins to shed a tear down from her eye. "Don't go!" She Shouted.

Ragnar said to her, "I have already made my decision."

"No!" Iris Shouted again.

Ragnar said to her, "I cannot refuse that which I have already sworn to do."

Iris said to him, "Please, Don't leave me... Don't leave me here!"

Then, Ragnar turns around and he looks at Iris while she is still hugging him and not letting go of him. Ragnar said to her, "Of all the confounded nuisances you are the worst, Iris."

Iris said to him, "That's harsh, Ragnar! Is there something I did against you? Please, just tell me what I did wrong... I'll do anything to fix it!"

Ragnar answered and said to her, "You have no Crimes to atone for, Iris."

Iris said to him, "You're going out there into the World and without me to help you? I couldn't have borne it, it'd been my gravest downfall."

"It would be your gravest downfall to come with me, Iris... and I couldn't have borne that. Please, don't worry about me... I'm going out there, alone."

"I know that well enough, Ragnar. Of course you are, and I'm going with you!"

"Iris, do not hinder me! There is no other way for me, I must go and I will finish what I have started so long ago!"

"Of course, but not alone! I'm coming too, or neither of us are going... I can't just stand idly by and do nothing!"

Then as Ragnar stared at Iris, he began to feel a sudden change of Heart inside of him as Iris is hugging him. Ragnar begins to wipe her Tears away and he looks at her with great pity and guilt that he wants to protect her, even if it means leaving her in a safer place. Then, Iris said to him, "I made a promise, Ragnar. A Promise: 'Don't leave him out there, Iris.' And I don't mean to... I don't mean to."

Ragnar puts his hand onto Iris's cheek and he looks and he stares at her for a long while as he started to have a sudden change of Heart. Then, he spreads open his arms and he wraps his arms around Iris and he hugs her and she hugs him back. And they began to hug each other for a long and good while and neither one of them let themselves go. Then, Ragnar looks at Iris and he actually smiled for once and then he says to her, "So my entire plan is spoiled. It is no good trying to escape you. But I am glad, Iris... I am glad that you are with me. Let me get Delphine with us and before we leave, we have a little business to take care of."

Then, he releases his arms from Iris and she also releases herself from him and then he goes outside of the Cave and he finds Delphine coming back to him. He then says to her, "Delphine, I have something to say."

"Of course, What's on your mind?" She asked.

Ragnar said to her, "You were right, Delphine. It's no good for me to leave you nor Iris. But before we go, I must have new Armor and new Weapons along with Iris if she wishes to follow me."

Delphine answered and said to him, "Very well, it shall be done. Let us not waste anymore time."

And so, Iris comes out from the Cave and she joins Ragnar and Delphine as they all return to Gunmar's home. They go in there and they await new Armor from Gunmar as he is the Blacksmith and the owner of this House. Only Delphine doesn't get new Armor nor any new Weapons for the rest of their Journey and their Battles. Delphine is the Ebony Warrior and she has fought her way against the forces of Darkness for as long as she could remember. She didn't need any new Weapons in particular, because she was powerful enough to have all the Demons fear her in their presence.

Gunmar crafts Nordic Carved Armor and Nordic Carved Weapons for both Ragnar and Iris as they waited in his House during this time.

## **EPILOGUE**

Ragnar puts on his New Armor along with his new Weapons along with the cape that he always had with him. Ragnar now carries Nordic Carved Armor with, Nordic Gauntlets, Nordic Boots, Nordic Arrows and a Nordic Greatsword. Iris also puts on her new Armor along with her new Weapons along with the Dagger that was given to her by Ragnar. She also carries Nordic Carved Armor But it was much lighter than Ragnar's Armor and she also carries a Nordic Sword. And so, they were all ready to set out to the World again and Delphine also gets herself ready and she puts on her Armor and grabs her Weapons and carries them on her back and takes her cape with her.

"Are you now leaving?" Gunmar asked.

Delphine said to him, "We are. Take care... Godspeed."

Gunmar said to her, "Don't get yourself killed, Ebony Warrior."

Therefore, Delphine left the House and she joined Ragnar and Iris as they were waiting for her outside. Ragnar, Iris and Delphine were on their way and they ventured forward on the long and Dark Road that was before them. They went down the road and they followed it for as long as they could ever go in the Lands of the Earth. The Road goes ever on and on, down from the door where it began, now far ahead the Road has gone, and they continued to walk down the



long road. At length as they followed the Road, they could see all the Lands of the Earth and the mountains before them.

And so, they continued onward, the Three Hunters through the Storm and never looking back and saving the lands and the people of the World throughout all of their journeys while aiming to search for the Land of Shadow. The Land of Shadow, The Kingdom of Satan, the Land of the Dead... Apocrypha. Their greatest Battle will surely be fought there and Delphine's greatest Battle will be fought with the Darkness within herself.

In time Delphine of Moria, the Ebony Warrior, walked out from the Darkness and found her Freedom. And this Story Shall also be told.

**THE END**